



# MOHAWK WARRIORS THREE

THE TRIAL OF LASAGNA, NORIEGA & 20-20

BY

KAHN-TINETA HORN

On July 11th 1990 the Surete du Quebec (Quebec Provincial Police) opened fire with automatic guns and tear gas on Mohawk men, women and children. The Mohawks had been protesting the town of Oka's plans to expand a golf course over a burial ground and common Indian land called *The Pines* in the community of Kanehsatake. Nearby Mohawks of Kahnawake responded very quickly to fellow Mohawks of Kanehsatake by blocking the Mercier Bridge, which connects the southshore to the Island of Montreal.

The world watched in amazement while a small nation faced the combined fire power of the Canadian Armed Forces, the SQ and the Royal Canadian Mounted Police.

It was a fight for Mohawk identity and land against the oppressive designs of a modern nation state. The stand off after 78 days came to an end.

The Quebec and Canadian governments maintained to the end their position that the Mohawk defenders were criminals and terrorists who threatened the public security of all. Out of this perspective Canada and Quebec quickly brought Mohawk defenders to trial on criminal charges.

The first trial is the subject of this book, which starkly shows the continuing conflicts in perspectives between the Mohawk people and the Canadian and Quebec governments. The Mohawks transcended the boundaries set up by Quebec and Canada under a European nation-state model.

Lasagna, from Kahnawake, Noriega and 20-20, from Akwesasne, were caught up in the events with their people at Kanehsatake/Oka. The three were ordinary Mohawk men who found themselves in the middle of a fight for identity, recognition and a war against oppression by the Canadian and Quebec governments. They maintained their silence throughout the trial, a statement of their non-compliance with the use of coercion, threats and force of arms against the Mohawk Nation.



# MOHAWK WARRIORS THREE

*THE TRIAL OF LASAGNA, NORIEGA & 20-20*

By

Kahn-Tineta Horn

Mohawk Nation News Service

Owera Books

Kahnawake

To  
the men, women and children of the Mohawk Nation  
and all our allies

© Owerá Books 1994

No part of this book may be reproduced in any form  
without permission in writing from the publisher. Any  
enquiries may be submitted to:

Owerá Books  
Box 333  
Kahnawake, PQ J0L 1B0  
(514) 638-3584 Fax (514) 635-8693

*Credits:*

*front cover and inside illustrations by Ioheres*  
*back cover illustration by Sheila Moses O'Brien*

## CONTENTS

Foreword	i
Acknowledgements	v
The Grand Opening	1
The Treasonous Witnesses	6
Neo-Colonial Masters Ignore Their Puppets	15
The House Warming Party	19
A Heavy Duty Night	27
A Hole Is A Hole Is A Hole	34
Lies, Lies And More Lies	42
Nothing But The Truth	51
Commentary: Railroading Our Warriors	63
The Army's First Assault	66
Short But Not So Sweet	83
Lawyer Brutality In St. Jerome Court	89
Kangaroo Justice Continues	95
Commentary: Polluted Waters Of Justice	102
Commentary: IRS Harasses Mohawks	109
Platoon II	111
The Greatest Justice System In The World?	118
Commentary: Where Are They Now?	122
Quebec Wants To Rewrite The Oka Crisis	124
Another Saturday Night In Ol' Kahnawake	127
The Crown Bombs Again	130
Courtly Show And Tell	133



Hallelujah! Our First Big Win	137
No More Can-Can At The Follies Briere	143
Lasagna And The Unknown Warrior	149
Army's Vendetta Against Lasagna Revealed	157
Rule Of Law vs Law Of Nature	165
More Soldiers Bite The Dust	168
The Nuremburg Trials Continue	173
The Army Tries To Salvage Its Reputation	176
The Lying Continues	182
Weird Al Takes The Stand	188
Eight More Charges Dropped	196
Army Offences Dropped For The Lazores	200
Court Goes Into A Tailspin	204
Judge Refuses To Split Trial	208
Any One See Lasagna?	211
Crown Briere Addresses The Jury	213
Julio And Owen Address The Jury	220
Judge Greenberg Wants A Hanging	235
Lasagna And Noriega Found Guilty	248
Sentence Hearings Begin	252
That Nasty Lasagna	259
Chiefs Testify On Behalf Of Our Warriors	270
The Sentencing	290
Afterword By <i>Karoniahente</i>	295

## FOREWORD

It was Wednesday, September 26, 1990. Fifty-two of us – men, women, children and 10 journalists – were holding out. That afternoon the War Chief had given us a coded message in Mohawk over the Kanehsatake Radio Station. He warned us to vacate Concentration Camp TC (Alcohol and Drug Treatment Center) as soon as possible because “something was coming down that night”. Since September 1, 1990 we had been surrounded by the Canadian Army, without communication with the outside world for several weeks, little food coming in, the weather getting cold. The army was stepping up its psychological warfare on us, and the Canadian and Quebec governments wanted an end to the Mohawk Crisis that had plagued the summer of 1990.

We broke into our clans – bear, wolf and turtle – to make our final plans. Some felt we should stay until Monday when Parliament would start its fall session. Then the Oka issue could be debated in Parliament, after a whole summer of neglecting the gravest political confrontation in modern Canadian history.

At 5:00 pm the Mohawk clans convened and found we had all reached the same decision – to leave in an hour. The authorities wanted the weapons and they wanted us to surrender. No way! We burnt the weapons and we did not surrender.

As two army helicopters hovered above us, everybody went into a flurry of preparations. All guns, radios and ammunition were burnt in a huge bonfire. A final purification ritual was performed before the sacred fire that had never stopped burning throughout the crisis, and we said our good-byes to each other. We did not know what was about to happen when we would walk head-on into the Canadian Army and all its armaments.

We knew that the Army, Surete du Quebec (SQ - the Quebec Provincial Police) and media had targeted Lasagna. The Canadian soldiers were jealous of him, the SQ wanted his blood, Canada and Quebec wanted him to pay for the Mohawks upsetting them. For a moment (not seriously, I hope) he wanted to stay behind and "look after himself", but we talked him out of it.

"Lasagna," I told him. "If we get out of here alive, I will do whatever I can to help you. I'll stick by you, no matter what!"

Then we all tried to walk out of Concentration Camp TC to freedom.

As we walked through the Pines and sang our Mohawk victory song, I was behind Lasagna. We crossed over the stretcher that had been placed on the razor wire. Immediately several soldiers grabbed Lasagna and began to kick, punch and beat him with their fists and guns. I ran to him and tried to stop the soldiers, "We're not armed, you know that. Stop! Stop killing him!" I screamed.

In the end we were all captured by the Army and the SQ.

I had been fired from my job with the Department of Indian Affairs in Ottawa because of my involvement in the Oka Crisis. My family and I were without money, and without job prospects. The government had apparently blacklisted me so I could not get a job (not even as a street cleaner).

I didn't see Lasagna again until April 1991 when I was moving back to the Kahnawake Mohawk Territory, near Montreal, Quebec, Canada. He came by with some warriors and helped us unload my belongings from the truck.

Ron Lasagna Cross's trial came up in September 1991. Joining him as defendants were two other comrades, Gordon

Noriega Lazore and Roger 20-20 Lazore. I monitored the trial for the Mohawk Nation. I attended the trial each day, including the day of the verdict and the day the sentence was given. I wrote daily reports of the trial and distributed them to the Indian people of Kahnawake. With my usual sense of humour I released the reports under the name of MNNS, the Mohawk Nation News Service.

I feel strongly that the proceedings of this trial should be available so that we do not forget the details of what happened in the Summer of 1990. The trial's testimonies give eye witness views of life during the crisis and show how the Canadian political and legal system is stacked against Indian people. Because they were originally written in haste with little concern for literary niceties, I have edited my reports to make them more polished. This book contains the complete collection of revised reports.

The trial proceedings were so strenuous, serious and frustrating for us that in order to deal with it I had to look at the events that unfolded from my own perspective.

As I sat in the court room, I felt I was in a foreign distant place. I had to force myself to stay. I would always look to the right of me at my three brothers – Lasagna, Noriega and 20-20 – sitting quietly behind the glass that surrounded the prisoner's dock.

Because they did not recognize the jurisdiction of the white man's court, they stayed true to their original decision to remain silent. They said nothing from the beginning, throughout the trial and afterwards. Once in a while though Lasagna would whisper to the likes of Major Tremblay passing by the prisoner's dock after testifying, "You're chicken shit". Or to one of the soldiers he would point to the bullet that hung around his neck on a string and mouth the words, "For you".

Our three warriors did not put in a defence. And they allowed the jury to decide their fate. After the verdict was announced, Roger 20-20 Lazore said, "I would do it again."

Kahn-Tineta Horn  
Kahnawake Mohawk Territory  
January 1992

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Thanks to Owen Young and Julio Peris, the lawyers for the three accused, the skilled practitioners of the white man's system of justice; to Karoniahente of the Mohawk Nation Office who spent a lot of time in court and at the same time tried to collect whatever funds she could to pay for the legal counsel; to Bonnie and Olive who ably assisted Karoniahente; to Kario for assisting me in preparing the manuscript for the printer, I could not have published this book without him; to Ioheres the Mayan illustrator with the Mohawk name; to Sheila who illustrated the back cover and proofread the manuscript; to Maria, Karakwine of Kanehsatake, Kevin and the others who attended the proceedings whenever they could; to the many who could not attend court because they would be recognized by the soldiers and the SQ as having been in the Pines and perhaps pointed out in the court by them; to all the faithful supporters such as the *Solidarity avec les Autochtones* (Fernande and ...); to Mike of the *McGill Daily*, who so generously gave of his time and his heart; to Joely who took care of my youngest child making it possible for me to attend court; to my clan mother, Kanietahawi, who never stopped encouraging me and giving me amazing insights; to all my children who, thankfully, never said to me, "Mom, why did you do it?"

I did not read any newspapers nor watched television throughout the trial, in order that I would not be influenced by their slant or misinformation or limitations.

Last, but not least, I wish to express my respect for my three brothers, dubbed the "Three Warriors", who do not realize how much they have done for the Mohawk and other Indian nations by their stand and their silence.

K. H.



## Monday, October 21, 1991

### The Grand Opening

MNNS - The first day of the Oka trial of Mohawks Ron Lasagna Cross, Gordon Noriega Lazore and Roger 20-20 Lazore opened up serious contradictions in the testimony of the Crown's two key witnesses.

There are 59 charges against our defendants, as follows: the Martin and Etienne assault – charges 1 to 7; the Lemay and Patry mischief – charges 8 to 13; The Mongeon mischief and theft – charges 14 to 15; the Jacobs and Bonspille beating and mischief – charges 19 to 36; and actions against the Canadian Army – charges 36 to 59.

The trial was well attended by the media, and some supporters and family of the defendants. The all-white jury of 12 serious, sombre-looking English speaking people sat silently to the left of the court room, trying to make head or tail of the confusing testimony they were subjected to. The translators were there for the Surete du Quebec (SQ) officers who might have to testify (most are unilingual French speaking).

As the Crown wishes to ignore the political issues involved and only wants to prove that the three defendants are outright criminals, more Mohawk supporters and people who can monitor the trials on a daily basis must attend. Mohawks must ensure that the real issues are exposed.

Crown prosecutor, Francois Briere, a short eager fair-haired francophone, in his opening statement said, "I will prove that the three accused acted as criminals against everybody!"

The first witnesses for the Crown against the Mohawks are Evelyn Diabo of Kahnawake, George Martin and Gerry Etienne of Kanehsatake. Diabo said she was a member of the

### Evelyn Diabo

Evelyn Diabo took the stand. At 48, she is a short portly woman with a pug nose, wearing a brown leather full length coat. Presently living in Kanehsatake, she is the wife of "Grand Chief" George Martin of Kanehsatake. Back in Kahnawake she is known as *the Woodpecker* because as a mean little kid she used to jump other kids and beat them on the back.

After swearing on the new testament, she described the incidents that took place on July 31, 1990 at the checkpoint in Kanehsatake, and on August 1st at her home on Nicholas Road in Kanehsatake, which resulted in counts 8 to 13.

On July 31st, the night before the event, she drove through the warrior checkpoint with a pizza and some videos. She had plans to spend a quiet evening behind the barricades with her husband. As they came through, Scott Gabriel suddenly appeared out of the blue and jumped on top of the car (for no reason at all), and then disappeared!

On August 1, 1990, her husband, George Martin, had gone to a meeting with the Assembly of First Nations (AFN) in Ottawa with fellow councillor, George Butch Etienne, who, she said, "always drives the car wherever we go." The meeting was with George Erasmus and Ovide Mercredi (both of AFN), and Tom Porter, a "snitch" from Akwesasne. The purpose was to ask for help.

As her husband and Etienne were arriving in Kanehsatake, she heard on the scanner at home, "George Martin is coming in with Gerry Etienne." The transmission came from a checkpoint at the west end of the reserve.

At the time she had been at home with her two step-grandchildren and her son, Morley Stacey, who was

watering the cedars. Martin and Etienne got home. A few minutes later, warriors Ron Cross, Daniel Nicholas, Guy Cross and another showed up at her house on foot in full army fatigues. Ron Cross was carrying a long gun with a strap. (She pointed out Ron Cross in the court room saying that she had known him for 15 years.)

She heard Daniel Nicholas yell, "Gerry Butch, get your fat ass out here. We want you!"

Cross repeated, "Gerry Butch, get your fat ass out here. We want you!"

She responded, "No one is going out there."

Two warriors then used gun butts to break her front door window. The door was pushed open three times. She was able to close it each time herself. Finally, Daniel Nicholas got in and punched Gerry Butch Etienne while Ron Cross held the gun on him, saying, "Why can't you be reasonable. Why don't you resign?" Then they left.

Upon questioning by Julio Peris, lawyer for the defendants, Diabo said she had never received any visits before from the warriors, and they never had any problems getting past the police and warrior checkpoints. The police usually checked their papers and the car trunk, while the warriors checked for alcohol because they did not want people to lose control during the crisis.

She told Peris that on the evening of August 1st she heard on the scanner, "Go and check them and don't let them out" (of the house).

She claimed that the voice she heard on the walkie-talkie was Psycho, "I know his voice. We used to be friends. His wife is from Kahnawake." She added that one of the warriors threw gravel at Etienne's car before they came into the house.

While she blinked and rolled her eyes up into her head, Diabo said that "honestly" she never once discussed this

incident since that time to this day. She did admit, although, that she was given a script by the Crown Briere to study her previous statements to the court just before this court appearance.

On August 1, 1990, Kanehsatake was surrounded by the Canadian Army. She evacuated from Kanehsatake and on August 2nd made a statement to the police. The SQ wrote it out for her and, after reading it, she signed it. She was placed in a Montreal motel. Her husband joined her on August 2nd, under police surveillance until September 26st. Gerry Butch Etienne also stayed at this same motel.

During the evacuation Diabo went back to the house and nothing was wrong, except she found an object under her son's car, which turned out to be a gun, and bullets all around her property. She called the police, made a second report and the police removed the gun from her property.

Evelyn told the court she has an excellent memory. She said the SQ gave her lots of time to read her statement before signing it. However, several discrepancies in her declaration and statements were pointed out, such as whether Cross had pointed a gun. Asked about her second declaration, she became confused and answered, "I wasn't certain this morning (in court testimony). I don't remember signing. I saw a document. Someone was making a gesture to me, and I filed another complaint."

Evelyn said the confusion was because the SQ officer did not speak English and he did not listen to what she told him. Also, she had been in a hurry. The court was adjourned for 15 minutes to look for her second declaration. It was not found. (Maybe it did not exist.)

Owen Young, lawyer for the defendants, questioned her about how her husband was selected to be Grand Chief and about 'clan people' meetings. She admitted they were not

Longhouse but Indian Act Band Council supporters (administrators for the government).

The second witness was Gerry Butch Etienne, 37 years old, a substantial man wearing sunglasses in the windowless court, and a former chief and councillor. He was told he had a choice of oath taking methods and chose to swear on the bible.

Of the event, he told Crown Prosecutor Briere that gravel was thrown at the screen of the door (but not at his car). Martin was in the bathroom, Evelyn Diabo was moving around, and Etienne did not see who was at the door.

He heard someone yell, "Where's George and Butch, we want to talk to them!" Then the window was smashed and the door was kicked open. He pushed the door to close it once (contradicting Diabo). He saw rifle butts and then saw Daniel Nicholas, with a gun.

Etienne said he did not know Ron Cross, had never talked to him, that the men were dressed in fatigues without masks. Martin in the meantime just stood there. Daniel Nicholas kicked Etienne on the left thigh and punched him on the left side. He did not recall if Nicholas spoke to him. Etienne claimed, "Cross pointed the weapon at us."

The trial continues ...



## Tuesday, October 22, 1991

### The Treasonous Witnesses

MNNS - The second day of the Oka trial of Mohawks Ron Lasagna Cross, Gordon Noriega Lazore and Roger 20-20 Lazore continued the cross-examination of Gerry Butch Etienne of Kanehsatake, who was testifying for the Crown against the defendants.

#### Gerry Butch Etienne, Pizza Runner

Gerry Butch Etienne of Kanehsatake, 37, a former councillor, nervously stood before the witness box with his wide back to the three defendants. He wore a brown leather jacket. Etienne recalled that while Cross was standing on the landing pointing a gun, "Ron Cross informed us that we were to resign as chiefs."

Another man in camo also spoke, but Etienne could not remember everything because he was dazed and distracted by the hit on the head. "I was kicked on the left side and struck on the left side of my head. My glasses flew off." So he couldn't see very well. Etienne added that Grand Chief George Martin stayed in the bathroom throughout the incident (scared shitless!).

Etienne stated that Cross said, "You better resign if you know what's good for you."

Etienne continued, "I felt if we did not resign, he would fix our clock!" And then the warriors filed out (like well trained soldiers), and made some remarks he couldn't remember. "Then I heard gunfire from the front of the house."

Evelyn Diabo, wife of George Martin, was very upset because they had violated the sanctuary of her home.

Etienne told George, "The situation is getting out of hand."

"I think it's time to evacuate!" Etienne took his 7 year old son and Martin took his 30 year old stepson, packed a duffel bag, and left the house at dusk, leaving Evelyn behind.

They stalked slowly and quietly through the woods because they feared the warriors would kill them.

"We circled around the barricades so the warriors wouldn't hear us. One police man was killed and we did not want to be the next victims. We cut across farmers' fields, cornfields and evaded the SQ spotlights, past some cattle, onto Route 344, behind the SQ." The warriors did not spot them as they hid among the cattle.

Etienne escaped and made it to the St. Eustache SQ detachment around midnight in order to make a statement. He did not go to a hospital to have his eye checked, probably because it was a minor injury, and he added, "I was too tired and distressed."

Owen Young, lawyer for Cross-Lazore-Lazore, asked if Etienne became chief in January 1990, and the process of his appointment and its significance.

Etienne said, "I've been associated with the Six Nations on many occasions." Etienne explained that there are 800 to 1200 members of the band, including the "clan people". Many live in the village of Oka.

Etienne was rather vague about who he represented, or in fact whether he represented anybody. He said he represented the people according to the custom of the clan people, who selected the clan mothers, who selected him to represent them on the Indian Act Band Council. (This position provided him with an income and control over federal government funds, programs and services designated for the Kanehsatake Band. The three clans are Bear, Wolf and Turtle.)

Etienne was appointed a life chief by Adeline Gabriel, Patricia Gabriel and Mabel Martin, at a meeting attended by 40

persons. A chief can be deposed for dishonesty or murder, or merely step down. At the same time George Martin was appointed Grand Chief, replacing Clarence Simon.

Although he said he was a Six Nations Traditional Hereditary Chief, he swore his oath on the holy bible. He rarely attended clan meetings, only on special occasions and emergencies. Etienne said he was appointed because the clan mothers were dissatisfied with the existing band council.

Clarence Simon was trying to hold onto his council seat until Etienne exposed Simon's business partnership with Ronnie Bonspille in an exclusive medical taxi and ambulance service from the reserve to St. Eustache. Bonspille, who also worked in the reserve school, had been charged with child molesting.

Etienne said that Simon's associate had been charged with the rape of six girls, including a patient with arthritis. He said Bonspille was found guilty of rape and is on probation. Etienne reported this to the federal Department of Health and Welfare and to the clan mothers.

The clan mothers called a meeting in December 1989 and asked Simon to straighten out. Bonspille and the father of one of the young girls were there and it was a hot meeting.

At this point in the testimony, Etienne turned around and pointed to Cross, who was sitting behind him in the prisoner's dock, and said, "Ron is an outsider, and he had no business being here. He just wanted my job as chief!"

Etienne said, "I was just concerned about what occurred in the community, about the federal government assimilating native people, about the erosion of our rights. My father was a Six Nations traditional hereditary chief for the band council under the Indian Act." (This council is not recognized by the Six Nations Confederacy.)

Young asked Etienne about his knowledge of the

"Longhouse People", who have one of the first forms of government in North America.

"That is your opinion. I am not acquainted with this. They are not band council either. They keep to themselves, like the trees and stones! Longhouse is merely a symbolic expression. They are like the Lion's Club. They do some singing and have festivals. Samson Gabriel is their chief. When we talk about traditional, we talk about the clan system."

"You have the same three clans and clan mothers?"

Etienne said his grandfather was traditional but did not consider himself longhouse or band council, but he was a life chief.

"Do the Longhouse people sometimes describe themselves as the 'Mohawk Nation'?"

Etienne answered that he never heard of the Mohawk Nation (in Oka) and did not know anyone from the Mohawk Nation. His council had never referred to themselves as the Mohawk Nation. "How can we call ourselves Mohawk Nation when there are other Mohawks elsewhere." When the crisis at Oka started the federal government wanted to deal with his council.

The jury was often perplexed. At least four times the jury was ushered out of the room so that Judge Greenberg could debate with the Crown and Defence counsel about the questioning process, and questions of oral tradition and facts. Also, he spent a great deal of time explaining finer points of law to the jury and how they should be listening to the evidence.

In the afternoon Etienne returned to the courtroom wearing regular glasses rather than his sun glasses. (The Crown probably advised him to let the jury get a look at his bloodshot eyes).

Young asked if he or his council had ever taken part in discussions with the federal government officials about the Oka golf course and land issues.

"Yes."

Young asked if he remembered that in August 1990 Judge Alan B. Gold was appointed to negotiate a resolution of the issue.

"I heard about it. He did not meet with us. Our band office headquarters was temporarily in St. Eustache."

Young asked him about the August 12th signing in the Pines of the treaty between Canada, Quebec and the Mohawk Nation (agreeing on three preconditions for the settlement of the land dispute).

Etienne admitted he knew nothing about the treaty before hand, but had heard about it on television. He had never attempted to find a copy of the document. "I think the agreement was in response to our BCR (band council resolution) to address the crisis in Kanehsatake. We passed 50 BCRs that stipulated the council's efforts to resolve the crisis."

Etienne said he also did not know of the second agreement between Canada, Quebec, the Mohawk Nation and the International Federation of Human Rights.

Young asked "Who did you meet with in Ottawa on August 1st?"

"The AFN, which represents all status Indians across Canada. There were no government officials at the meeting. The president and vice president, executive council, Tom Porter from Akwesasne, and Mr. Lecaille, our attorney."

As 82% of the community had evacuated, Etienne said they worked with the civil protection authorities of Public Security. He had met Tom Siddon, Minister of Indian Affairs, who came to St. Eustache on June 21, 1990.

Etienne said that before the July 11th raid, he had gone several times on official visits to the Pines. "There was a bunch of people there conducting a vigilance and making a small log cabin. There were no guns around and they did not try to hold me hostage. I don't believe in violence."

On July 10th Etienne and the council met with John Ciaccia, the Quebec government negotiator, in Montreal.

Julio asked about the July 10th meeting, "Did you know about the impending raid on July 11th?"

"On July 10th we had a meeting with the SQ in Mr. Lecaille's office. We tried to keep the SQ from taking any action as they said they would. We had another meeting with them that evening."

"Why did you plead with them not to take any action?"

"They told us that the SQ were coming in soon. I never dreamed things would happen the way they did. We met with Siddon and Ciaccia on July 10th, told the SQ not to come into Kanehsatake because they would increase tensions and perhaps a confrontation would happen."

Julio asked about August 1st when he left Kanehsatake.

Etienne said he went to St. Eustache to give testimony to the SQ. "I was not in tip top shape (then nor now?), I was tired and fatigued." (after his gruelling ordeal escaping from the warriors through the woods hiding among the cows)

Adrenalin was flowing. Leaning heavily on the witness box, Etienne said, "I signed the document because I agreed to most of it." The police officers wrote it. "I haven't seen it since, but I saw some of it with the transcript for the preliminary just before I came in here."

Julio asked him where he stayed when he left on August 1st.

"In a motel, with Grand Chief Martin." (paid by Public Security) "I officially came back on Monday September 24th,



two days before the warriors surrendered and were defeated!" (Wait a minute here!) Before that he had come back to Kanehsatake on three "excursions" with the Martins. They went to Martin's house and found no damage. The barricades had been cleared by the authorities.

Etienne said that Public Security was concerned about the Mohawk people trapped in the gym after the Canadian Army had closed in, and the SQ hired a bus to take them out.

Julio asked if he ever met with the police since, and if he ever discussed with Martin what happened on August 1st.

"I can't remember. We might have." (right!) Both Martin and Diabo had come with him to court today for moral support.

Julio asked Etienne if he was aware of any group of citizens from Kanehsatake that claimed to protect merchandise from homes of Indian people who had evacuated, and about Ronnie Bonspille's association with this.

Etienne, after a long pause, said, "Those who stayed behind were responsible for their own protection and security. No one was given any law enforcement authority. We could do nothing because we were out of the community."

Every so often, that bothersome little Crown Briere jumped up to get his two cents in. The Judge reminded him that he had accused Cross of going against everyone in authority, including the Grand Chief, Francis Jacobs of the Citizens Committee and even the "vigilantes", therefore questioning of Etienne could be broadened.

Julio asked about Corey Jacobs's whereabouts, one of the victims in the indictment who had cancelled out as a witness for the Crown.

Etienne said he saw Jacobs recently shopping in the pharmacy in Oka but did not speak to him because of bad feelings in the community. "We aren't in the same groove!"

Etienne said that in June 1991, a plebiscite was forced on the people by Indian Affairs and a new council was put in place. His council was no longer recognized by Indian Affairs.

The new Grand Chief of the Mohawks is Gerry Peltier, an Ojibway from Manitoulin Island, Ontario. Gerry's wife and children are Mohawk and he is a former employee of the federal government. The new council has no relation to custom and is strictly a puppet Indian Act Council.

"We sent out a letter that we were supportive of our clan system and did not participate. Now we have meetings, but we have no official functions." (like a provisional government)

Julio once again asked about the July 31st incident.

"I had purchased a pizza in St. Eustache and was going back to my house. The Police had already checked everything, looking for weapons. I took off my headlights to cause no glare and put my parking light on. It was 10:00 in the evening. I stopped at the Mohawk barricade, which I had passed earlier. A warrior flashed a light in my face and I refused to open my trunk. I wanted to go home and have my pizza. I thought the warriors might try to take my pizza from me, and I might get shot if I resisted.

"The warrior demanded, 'I want to check your trunk.' (It was because people were bringing in booze and getting drunk and trying to challenge the warriors.)

"I told him, 'I don't got no booze!'"

Etienne decided to risk his life to save his pizza. "I did not want to stop at the Mohawk checkpoint fearing that the warriors might confiscate my pizza." So he proceeded and almost ran over Scot Gabriel.

"As I drove through a man with a gun (Scot Gabriel) suddenly ran in front of my car to stop me from going on.

The other warrior with him was Guy Cross. When he saw I wasn't going to stop, he jumped on the hood of my car. I stopped the car, got out and opened the trunk saying 'Come see for yourself.' They pointed their guns but I did not pay attention." Then he drove off into the night to eat his pizza.

The trial continues ...



Not even the rez dogs are gonna get our pizza, George!

## Wednesday, October 23, 1991 Neo-Colonial Masters Ignore Their Puppets

MNNS - The credibility of the three crown witnesses is plummeting fast.

The trial continued the cross-examination of two witnesses for the prosecution, Gerry Butch Etienne and George Martin, both of Kanehsatake.

Gerry Butch Etienne, 37, a former councillor, lost his temper while under cross-examination when a contradiction of his own statements was pointed out to him.

Etienne's declaration on August 1st to the SQ was shown to the jury. It made no mention of Ron Lasagna Cross pointing a gun in the Martin house, nor of Cross using an AK47 machine gun to break down the door. In fact, there is no mention of an AK47 at all.

Etienne said his frequent memory lapses during two days in the witness box were due to his forgetting to tell the information, or to a police officer forgetting to record it.

Etienne said he never went to the hospital to have his eye checked after he fled the territory. (Why didn't he go while he was languishing in luxury and freedom in a Montreal motel for the rest of the crisis? Eh!)

Julio Peris, lawyer for the defendants, discovered on cross-examination that the police had taken photos of the "brutal injuries" that Etienne had sustained at the hands of the warriors.

But little Crown Briere, jumped up and told the court that he did not know of any photos. He asked for an adjournment so that they could send a police officer to check the SQ office, about 50 meters away. Minutes later the photos were miraculously found. They showed Etienne with no injuries at

all! His glasses were not broken, and a spyglass or microscope couldn't pick up the "injury".

### George Martin, The Klan Chief

Grand Chief George Martin, a pudgy 45 year old man with a short nose, took the stand. He said about the same thing as Etienne concerning the August 1, 1990 event in his home (although Etienne said Martin was in the bathroom the whole time).

Martin complained that Federal officials ignored suggestions by the Kanehsatake Band Council on how to deal with the Oka Land Crisis. Martin recounted events leading up to the 78 day standoff, such as, trying to get a meeting with federal Indian Affairs Minister *Tom-Tom Siddon* in Ottawa, only to be told that Siddon was playing golf. (E-e-ek!!)

According to Martin, when Indian leaders were brought together for a high level meeting with Siddon and his provincial counterpart, John Ciaccia, in the Oka pine forest, his council was again brushed aside.

Martin had watched the events on television from his luxury hideaway in a Montreal motel (next door to Oka Mayor Ouellette). His council and Mohawk chiefs from Akwesasne attended a meeting with the AFN leaders about two weeks after the standoff began, discussing ways to end the dispute.

On his return from Ottawa on July 31, Martin said a group of warriors burst into his house and ordered him at gunpoint to resign.

Martin recounted how he fled after dark with councillor Gerry Butch Etienne. Posing as cows, they made their way on foot along farm hedgerows, cornfields and cattle to avoid detection by warriors at floodlit barriers.

Owen Young cross-examined him. He went through the

history of the Iroquois Clans, how chiefs are chosen and their authority, similar to the questioning the previous day of Etienne. This time though it went faster.

Martin said he is still Grand Chief and he and the clan people still meet, even though he has no authority or recognition from the Department of Indian Affairs. He talked about the events that happened in Kanehsatake from May to August 1st.

Julio Peris cross-examined him on the July 31st incident at the Mohawk barricade when Scot Gabriel was almost run over.

Martin too was greatly worried about the pizza in his car trunk getting cold. (He could have heated it in a microwave oven, couldn't he, which would have taken some of the heat off!)

Martin was confronted with his testimony from the preliminary inquiry about the July 31st incident and his other testimony since that time. He had said that the warriors made complaints about Gerry Butch Etienne running down Scot Gabriel. Today he denied ever saying it.

It looks like Etienne and Martin had started the ball rolling in Oka, but when it got too hot, they wanted to evacuate. They tried to run away from the situation without being seen, by sneaking back into the territory to get their things out, and, on the way in, they ran down Scot Gabriel. In fact, there were no rifle butts when Martin's door was 'kicked' open. They called Nicholas and Cross a "Fucking bunch of half-breeds". And they preferred being kicked out of Kanehsatake in order to save face. The fact is that they have testified against their own people and those who stayed behind and protected their land. Do they deserve medals for this! No!

## Meanwhile Back At The Ranch

In Kahnawake Territory, which is surrounded round the clock by RCMP and SQ "death squads", there have been several daily incidents of police attacking Mohawk citizens.

For example, on Monday, October 21st, three women were followed off the territory by the SQ, stopped and physically frisked for no reason. On Thursday night at 1:30 am October 25th, one Indian man was chased on the territory by RCMP to "Land Claims Warrior Checkpoint" on Route 207. The Mohawk ran into the cement block at the checkpoint, and was arrested by the RCMP and taken to Parthenais Prison in Montreal. A crowd had gathered, and, when Chief Peggy Mayo tried to speak to the RCMP, the officer pulled a gun on her.

Kakwirakeron, a Mohawk who served a sentence over the blockade at Akwesasne, said, "When my trial was on, the people of Akwesasne and other Mohawk territories were set up and completely surrounded by police so that none of my witnesses dared come out to attend my trial, or leave their families without defense. These incidents are definitely related to the trial of Cross-Lazore-Lazore."

Monday, October 28, 1991  
The House Warming Party

MINNS - The credibility of the three crown witnesses has plunged to the bottom of the Lake of Two Mountains. Even the Judge and jury were chuckling over Grand Chief George Martin's fake confusion.

A warrior girl from Kahnawake who attended the trial on Wednesday, October 23 said, "That Gerry Etienne is nothing but a smart ass. Mostly everything he said was, 'I don't recall'. George Martin said he was standing by the door during the incident, and not hiding in the bathroom, as Gerry Etienne had stated."

Martin said that Evelyn Diabo, his wife, told him to go out, to stand near the door, to leave the territory that night (on August 1, 1990, while she bravely stayed behind the lines).

Julio Peris, lawyer for the defendants, pointed out that last year (October 24, 1990) Martin stated that when he was at the check point, Scot Gabriel jumped on the hood of the car and that the warriors yelled, "You ran over Scot, you bumped him!"

In court Martin denied the yelling, contradicting his own declaration. He also told the court he didn't mind the SQ checking his car trunk, but did not like the warriors doing it. He was scared his pizza might get cold.

Martin pretended, the warrior girl said, that he did not realize he was lying. "They asked him if he realized he was lying and he said, 'No'. What's wrong with him? Is he stupid, or what? Eh!" (Let's face it, Indians are lousy liars.)

The warrior girl said, "That Council was useless, and continues to be useless."

The warrior girl said that Owen Young, lawyer for the defendants, questioned Martin on how he got onto his "cave



clan council" and what kind of council it is.

Martin said it wasn't "traditional", it wasn't "band", it was a "clan" council recognized by the government. (Leave it to Indian Affairs to keep everybody baffled. Just doing their job.)

Martin said he was adopted into another clan and about 45 to 50 people (out of 2000 members) appointed him to be Grand Chief.

Martin said of the council, "It's just for money!" ... and during the Crisis closed down the office and stayed in a luxury motel somewhere. Sure, he saw the signing of the treaty (on August 12, 1990) in the Pines on TV. Martin was given his 12 page statement after his mess-up last Wednesday to refresh his memory, but it didn't help. He messed up again! He swore on the new testament (which helps when you have to forget some things and remember other things that may not have happened). He said that Crown Briere read his declaration to him (apparently because he has difficulty reading).

He stated in his declaration that Daniel Nicholas entered his home *twice* on the evening of August 1 1990, and never mentioned Guy Cross. In court he testified that Nicholas came in *once*, and that Guy Cross was armed.

Martin's signed declaration read, "a guy named Daniel Nicholas, aged 27...", which Martin said was his reference to Guy Cross (a real big stretch here).

Martin had retorted, "What I said was the truth. It's the SQ who took things down wrong." He had read every page and signed his declaration, even though he noticed the SQ officer left out such important facts as Dan Nicholas throwing stones at his house, how the warriors kicked his door (rather than using the gun butt), and how scared he was when the gun was pointed at him.

Asked why these were not in his declaration, Martin replied he was more worried about his two step-grandchildren and his wife who were left back at Kanehsatake.

It seems either Martin or the SQ don't know how to read or write. Martin had difficulty twisting the information around and ended up confusing himself and the jury. During the siege paranoia abounded, created by the politicians and bureaucrats. This led to all kinds of unfounded and confused statements and declarations. Martin admitted being at a meeting on July 10th, knew that the July 11th raid was coming down, and he apparently failed to help his people out.

One observer said, "*Sylvester* and *Tweetie* (as George and Gerry are sometimes called) are out to save their own skin! If he was worried about the kids, why did he leave without them?"

Another observer said, "George Butch Etienne ran the checkpoint twice. He did not want to stop and apparently hit Scot Gabriel one time. Why weren't any charges every laid against them?"

### Bernard Lemay

(Not SQ Lemay who was killed in the July 11th raid on the Mohawks)

Bernard Lemay, 45 year old francophone, wept silently and could hardly talk when he described how he had to leave his luxurious home on Chevalier Road on Indian land in Kanehsatake, and how it had been ransacked. He spoke only in French, which was translated by a soft-spoken translator. This man was scared of the Army and the Indians, so on July 29th he moved for six months to the Relax Inn in Laval, paid by Quebec Public Security.

On August 3rd, he went back to his Kanehsatake residence. Everything was normal and he took out a sewing machine and some clothing from the house. Francis Jacobs,

of the Kanehsatake Citizens Patrol, showed up and told him he was keeping an eye on his house, and to call Ronnie Bonspille if necessary.

He went back on August 11th and found the place ransacked. "Everything was broken, the fridge was on the floor with excrement in it, and it smelled like a henhouse! The chairs and tables were tossed, cupboard doors were off and broken, the windows were shattered, bullets in the ceilings and walls. Everything was upside down. Clothing was thrown all over the floor. The piano was severely damaged. The TV was completely severed in two. The bed was undone, dirty, with blood on the sheets and blankets. In the basement the wine cellar was ransacked. Of 400 bottles of wine, only 150 remained."

He had a photo album of the whole scenario – the bullet hole, the flower pots on the floor, the little radio that had been broken ...

Lemay said he does ceramics and is very interested in birds. His birdhouses had been smashed too.

He was particularly upset about his Quebec fleur de lys flag having been taken down from the flagpole and torn apart and shot up. (He photographed everything else, but couldn't take a picture of this "unforgivable atrocity".)

His washer, freezer, chain saw, tractor and all his other toys had disappeared.

The jeep parked in the back of the house had four flat tires (flattened by raccoons).

He also found things that didn't belong to him – a golf glove, casings, unused bullets and a flashlight.

He produced a telephone bill with a \$25.30 charge for long distance calls to St. Constant, New York and Brooklyn – all made on August 9.

*Side notes:* Since the trial started, the SQ and RCMP have stepped up attacks and provocation on the Mohawks of Kahnawake and Kanehsatake, who are now on continuous stand by because of the police action. An observer from Kahnawake said, "We fear an invasion of the SQ and RCMP, and maybe even the Army. It is now one and a half years since the Crisis, and we're still under siege."

It was noticed that almost every white woman at the courthouse was wearing a mini leather skirt, while the Indians are dressed in cloth. (Wasn't it the other way around once upon a time?)

Also, court security is heavy for Mohawks entering the courtroom where the trial is taking place. We always get searched with a metal stick they run up and down our bodies.

As well, the SQ in St. Jerome are clean shaven, unlike the ones that tear around Kahnawake in their squad cars. Why?

We also noticed that the Crown Prosecutor Briere has been wearing the same olive green (camo coloured) pants under his black lawyer's gown every single day since the trial started. (Maybe he's a closet warrior!)

### Francis Jacobs

Francis Jacobs was next on the stand. He is a 45 year old Mohawk from Kanehsatake. He spoke very low, as if he didn't want to be heard.

Jacobs stayed on the reserve the whole time with his wife and three children until September 1st when he left for 17 days. Jacobs was once chief of the clan band council until March 1990 (when he lost his neo-colonialist government job). Since then he's worked on and off with Ronnie Bonspille's ambulance service, transporting Mohawk people to hospitals.

During the Crisis he did some patrols of properties inside

the barricades. He was a 'housesitter' for the white people with homes in the Indian territory who left during the Crisis.

In the third week of July about 50 people had met at the gym to set up the patrols of vacated properties. Jacobs joined the patrols along with his son Corey, Ronnie Bonspille, Bobby and James Nelson, Gordie Oak, Paul Garrow, Pierre Lamouche, Canotoquin, Willie Nelson and other natives of Oka. (Why so anxious to protect non-Indian property?)

Jacobs talked about the organization (or lack of) of the patrols. At least 20 people were on patrols with no set routes or schedules. Communications were handled through CBs 24 hours a day. "Everybody went and checked on the houses. Ronnie bought CBs for us, and his house was our headquarters. I patrolled with Corey. We always had two people in private cars checking houses. We worked 24 hours a day."

Julio Peris asked how many interventions they took part in.

"Quite a few." said Jacobs. He once saw Ron Cross on the passenger side of a red jeep going along the 344. The jeep belonged to Patry, the owner of the Petro Canada gas station in Oka. (He didn't say who was driving it.) Patry lives in Oka Gardens, a luxurious housing development on Indian territory for white people only.

Jacobs went to the Lemay house on the night of August 11th after getting a call to go there. He saw a light from the window and drove to the end of the driveway. He could hear people talking inside the house, but could not understand them. "Ronnie Cross came out of the house through a small window right next to the door, where the jeep was parked." (Why didn't Cross just come out the open door?)

Jacobs described Roger 20-20 Lazore as one of the people he saw there, as well as Gordon Noriega Lazore. "Gordon

was carrying an M16. It was three feet long. He told us to leave, sort of pointing a gun toward us." (He saw all this in the dark). "Noriega told us to get the hell out of there. I spoke to Ron Cross when he first came out and asked what they were doing there."

Cross said they were just partying as they had been in the bush for five weeks.

"I told him we were checking the houses, when Roger came out. They both said nothing was going to happen to us, and they would clean it." Cross didn't say much and talked nicely to him.

Jacobs said he did not argue with a guy with a weapon in his hands and who was drinking. He heard some girls giggling inside but saw nobody. The M16 was the only weapon he saw.

"As I left the Lemay house, I drove backwards towards 344 and met Dennis Nicholas, one of the band members. We parked on the side of the road and talked. Walter David drove by. Dennis said he came from TC (the drug and alcohol treatment Center) and was going up to get the guys out of Lemay's house."

Jacobs explained that he had previously met with Dennis Nicholas and the warriors at TC to make an agreement. Promises were made to send in security backup when houses were broken into. Whenever the doors of a house were found open, they were to take equipment out of the house to Ronnie Bonspille's. There the goods were to be recorded, later to be taken to the St. Eustache SQ.

Then James Nelson called that someone had broken into an A-frame on Center Road that was empty and up for sale. (There was no mention of who broke into this house while our guys were allegedly at Lemay's house.)

Then they heard 30 shots from an automatic coming from

Lemay's. Although they wondered what the hell was going on they decided that then was not the time to check it out.

Jacobs went back to Lemay's house the next day, August 12th, around 10:30 or 11:00 am with James Nelson, Robert Nelson and a "Mike". The house was totally ransacked. Even the jeep had bullet holes through the tire rims and rad.

The trial continues ...

**Tuesday, October 29, 1991**

## **A Heavy Duty Night**

MNNS - It's four witnesses down and the Army to go. The trial continued with the cross-examination of Francis Jacobs, a Mohawk of Kanehsatake and a witness for the prosecution.

Someone wondered, "Why did George Martin and Gerry Etienne have to sneak out in the dead of night from the territory on August 1st? The warriors would have gladly escorted them out."

This is the only courtroom with heavy SQ security. One supporter asked why the metal detector treatment was saved only for Indians. The SQ officer replied, "You're in a distinct society." (Cheeky, eh!)

Francis Jacobs stood in the witness box sporting a brown leather jacket. (He, Gerry Etienne and Evelyn Diabo must shop together.) He said that on August 11th he was on patrol with his son Corey. Around 9:15 pm they left the Food Bank at the school gym on Center Road. He did not tell anyone they were going to the barricades towards the Pines, and arrived at Lemay's house on Chevalier Road at 9:30 pm.

Jacobs said, "We saw the light (from the road) and decided to investigate." He did not call for any backup. "We saw a jeep, which Ron Cross and Gordon had been riding in."

Julio Peris, lawyer for the defendants, challenged, "The day before you said you only recognized Ron Cross on the passenger side, you did not recognize who was driving, and today you say you saw Gordon too."

"Well .. mm .. I saw them two different times."

Crown Briere jumped up (wearing for the fifth day in a row his smelly olive green camo coloured pants under his black lawyer's gown). He objected to how confused Jacobs



was getting.

Jacobs said, "When Mr. Cross crawled out of the small window next to the door, I walked up to him. I have known Mr. Cross and used to play baseball with him. (Is that why Jacobs keeps a baseball bat in his car?) I knew he was part of the people at TC."

Jacobs did not call up warrior security. "I could smell beer on his breath, some girls were giggling inside the house and Roger Lazore crawled out the small window too. Cross and Roger had no weapons, and Gordon Lazore came out the window last."

Meanwhile, the Jury of six men and six women (seven wearing glasses), stared at the witness in amazement.

According to Jacobs, Gordon Lazore with gun pointing towards the ground told him to get the hell out of there.

As Jacobs left Lemay's house, he saw Dennis Nicholas but did not tell him he had seen the guys (that Nicholas was looking for). He also saw Walter David Jr. driving up to the Lemay house to join the party. (The Kanehsatake elite were at this party.)

Jacobs drove to the gas bar on the reserve and talked for a half hour to Ronnie Bonspille, Clarence Simon, Willie Nelson and someone else. He never told them about the three guys coming out of Lemay's window.

Then James Nelson reported on the CB that there was another break-in on Center Road. Everybody jumped into their cars and went to check out the house and shed. "There was nobody there except the chickens, which had not been fed for a few days and some were dead. So we took care of the chickens." (rather than going to Lemay's)

"We tried to close the doors and windows of the house and then heard shots. We all went outside the house and some were already in their cars." Jacobs finally told Ronnie

Bonspille, Clarence Simons and James Nelson about the party at Lemay's house and that he did not want to get involved.

"We all left and went back to the Food Bank, talked for a while, and went out on patrol again." He went home at 3:00 am, never going back to Lemay's and never telling anyone at the Food Bank about the goings on there.

The following day Jacobs went to Lemay's for 10 to 15 minutes with James Nelson, Robert Nelson, Mike and Corey. "We went into every single room of the house." He still did not tell anybody what he saw the night before, and then went home to do some yard work.

Jacobs did not talk about it for a whole month. He left Kanehsatake during the crisis on September 1, 1990, met the police on September 13th to make out a declaration, and met them again at his house on September 17th or 18th to talk about the incident at Lemay's. (Where? At his place in Oka. Our treaties never got as much attention from the authorities as Jacobs's declarations).

Jacobs said it was the SQ who brought up the subject of the Lemay house. They wrote out the three page declaration which he signed in the presence of two SQ police officers, his daughter, his two boys and his wife. He said the SQ visited him often, for hours at a time, just shooting the bull! "Everything that was put on the paper, I signed. There were two or three others." They saw Corey alone for several hours too.

He was visited another time by *Heckle* and *Jeckle*, Crown Briere and SQ officer Fortin, for an hour preparing him for what it would be like to testify in court against the Indians, and the different things he might be asked. (Yeah for Coach Briere!) He met them again just before coming into the courtroom.

In his declaration he had stated that Roger Lazore had no

moustache or beard. Today Jacobs scratched his head and looked at Robert sitting in the prisoner's dock and said, "Roger had a moustache and beard. There were different times I saw him and he might or might not have had a moustache and beard. It could have been the truth!"

Jacobs defended his inconsistency, "The officers that came to my place could not understand English too well." And he could not understand their writing. (It was a communications breakdown.)

Owen Young asked about the August 11th incident at Lemay's.

Jacobs replied that The Concerned Citizens of Kanehsatake had a meeting of about 50 people to establish the house patrol two weeks before the incident at Lemay's. However, there was no approval by the band council or chief for these patrols. Jacobs thought that because he had been life chief until March 1990, the group had adequate community support through his participation.

How did Jacobs lose his lifetime position? "Well, the clan mothers (of the clan people) did not agree with my position." And he lost the confidence of the people. "They put me out and did not want the people's voice to be heard at the band office."

Jacobs developed a working relationship with Dennis Nicholas and the TC people during the crisis. "I don't know all the individuals there. They were warriors and Longhouse people. Everybody was at TC one time or another, even from different reserves. Some dressed as warriors, but maybe they weren't warriors or Longhouse."

Jacobs called Dennis Nicholas whenever weapons were found. "One time a young woman called and said young guys were drinking and we called the warriors to check it out. We set up districts to patrol. The warriors did not want any

trouble, and did not want booze there."

Cooperation between the House Patrol and the warriors continued during the August 11th incident at Lemay's until September 1st.

Owen Young asked, "When you went to Lemay's and saw the jeep, didn't you feel threatened?"

"No."

"When they told you they had been five weeks in the bush, that it was stressful for everybody, you understood, didn't you? That is why you did not make a big deal of it. Is it possible when Gordon Lazore came out, pointing the gun down at the ground, you understood?"

"Yes."

### Bernard Patry and His Jeep

Bernard Patry, wearing a cheap toupee, speaking in French, owner of a gas bar in Oka, was the next witness.

Patry almost broke down when he spoke about his 1951 antique red Willie Jeep - how he lovingly rebuilt her, took care of her, kept her in his heated garage and how sentimental he felt about her.

Patry left his home on St. Germain in Kanehsatake on July 11th and went back the next weekend because his neighbour had said, "Bernard, come, come, please, I am alone!" (He was really desperate to see his jeep.)

The jeep was still there and he slept over on Saturday and left Sunday. He and his nervous wife had to cross SQ and warrior barricades in order to go home to sleep on their "own good bed". (Oh, yeah!)

On Monday, July 24th the warriors stopped them at the barricade, shut off his truck lights, and told them to get out of their truck and wait. Seven to ten masked warriors talked together and then told them to leave the territory.

He got a call from his neighbour and was told his house had been broken into. "We tried the next day to go back but were again stopped by the warriors." He eventually returned to his residence when the army moved in.

Crown Briere told Patry to look at the booklet of pictures of his house and to not say anything. (And please don't start to cry.) Briere asked, "Do you see something personal?"

"Yes, my jeep!" said Patry in a choked up voice.

Briere asked him what was his jeep doing. (She was just sitting there waiting for some action).

When Patry went to his residence on September 1st it was totally ransacked. "And the jeep she was not there," sobbed Patry putting his hands to his face.

"Where is your jeep today?"

"In my garage ... and she's a pile of scrap. (trying to control his emotions) She has been shot 32 to 35 times."

He said the last time he saw his jeep in front of his house was at the end of July, and the next time it was behind the warrior lines. "I saw her on television. (And he was so excited to see her.) I did not recognize the people in my jeep." (Like she had been violated.)

#### Jean Dione, The Anal Retentive Ballistics Expert

Jean Dione, the anal retentive, shell shocked ballistics expert, was the next witness. The squinty-eyed francophone was born in 1950, and has handled firearms since 1960. (At 10 years of age?) He was brought in by "Brilliant" Briere, who asked him to describe ad nauseum his incredible credentials. Then Dione immediately got confused over mistakes on his drawing of the Lemay house floor plan. He got mixed up between North and South, and right and left. (Owen Young started cracking up.)

Dione produced over 100 pictures of the attempted

execution of Lemay's house (which apparently was wounded and recovered, with that miracle of modern medicine called insurance). (Doesn't he realize that dragging that house through the court is keeping it from "healing". It's a violation of its "home" rights!)

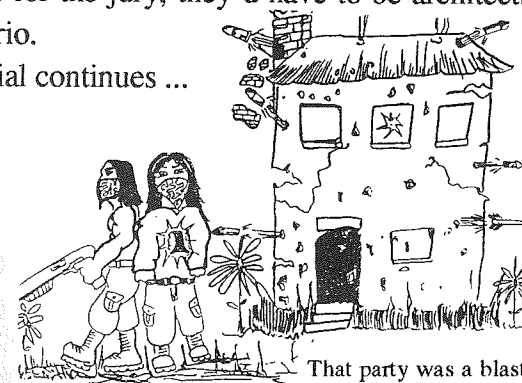
There were 27 shots. Dione had a dozen pictures of each shot, how the bullet was shot from the first floor, went through the ceiling and out through the roof of the house, to God knows where.

The house had towers, windmills, turrets, indoor and outdoor, downstairs and upstairs, this and that. After the shoot-up during the house party Mr. Lemay's dream house must have looked like Swiss cheese. (Should have sent a picture to Better Homes and Gardens, Eh?.) The marksman kept trying to knock out that turret.

While everybody in the courtroom dozed, one hour later Dione was talking about bullet number 5 (with 22 more to go). He even said one bullet landed safely on its side on a towel.

Little Crown Briere was the only one in the courtroom who was excited and interested in each and every bullet hole in the house. (He and Dione were obviously toilet trained too early!) The SQ tore the place apart in order to retrieve the bullets. Maybe it was one bullet that ricocheted all over the place! As for the jury, they'd have to be architects to follow this scenario.

The trial continues ...



That party was a blast!



Wednesday, October 30, 1991  
A Hole Is A Hole Is A Hole

MINNS - The cross-examination continued of anal retentive shell-shocked ballistics expert, Jean Dione, a witness for the prosecution.

Crown Prosecutor Briere finally changed his camo pants for grey ones. (His mother probably made him do it.) Old Man Paquette, the Judge's gofer who sits to his left, is asleep again. Today the judge had to wake him up to pass some pictures around to the jury. Several policemen and government representatives have been sitting close behind the Indian supporters, monitoring the Indians and the trial every day.

Would you believe Dione had 119 photos of bullet holes, and today he started to describe the impact of the 14th bullet, or "projectile".

One bullet went through the hallway, continued through the kitchen, the dining room and headed out the back door into the bushes. The window was miraculously not broken, because the door was left open.

He described the 15th, 16th, 17th, 18th and 19th bullet holes in great detail, which were shot at the front of the house, hitting the front door, first window, and stone walls. (He's still trying to convince us that someone shot up the place?) Bullets 20 and 21 hit the east side stone walls.

Then Dione started to describe what happened on the inside of the house. (Didn't the Army and SQ also have access to this house too?) Bullet number 25, a 300 calibre with a "full metal jacket" (Hey, isn't that a movie?), was the only bullet recovered. Dione said due to the number, grooves, and width, it likely came from an AK47, of Russian or Chinese manufacture. (Question. Which projectile caused the

blood on the sheets?)

Bullet 26 went through the window, the closet, the folding doors and finished on the back wall of a closet. (Were they well aimed, or what!) The bathroom was shot up, the bullet went through the bathtub, the wall, hit the door and ended in the linen closet. Number 27 hit a door knob, shattered and ended in another closet. Two bullets even hit each other. (Is this possible?)

Dione said the AK47 is a military weapon made to shoot fully automatic. On pressing the trigger, the weapon will continuously fire while the finger is on the trigger.

Owen asked whether, on September 20th, he found only one bullet.

Dione said, "Yes, and it probably came from an AK47 not an M16."

Owen then asked if he could determine how long the bullet holes were there.

Dione blinked and said it is impossible to determine when the firing was done, because the materials do not show signs of aging. (Probably because they're all synthetic). There is no way to tell the age of the firing of the bullet, whether it was the day or month before.

Crown Briere then started to cross-examine his own witness, but the Judge put a stop to it. Briere wanted to know if Dione could determine if the bullets were fired from an AK47 or M16.

Dione the great ballistics expert said, "It is difficult to determine the slight differences between weapons." He asked if he could go to his library and look it up. He was temporarily dismissed. He came back later and said he could continue to answer the questions.

Dione fumbled through his grey matter for a while and remembered the difference between the two guns. Dione



using his hands to indicate length said, "The M16 is this long since it is a hunting weapon." Putting his hands closer together, he said, "The AK47 is a little shorter since it is an assault weapon." (It was just too scientific for us!) The AK47 selector has a long rod and is held on the right hand side. The charger is slightly curved, but could be adapted to a different shape. (Enough of Dione.)

Dennis Nicholas was requested to be in court today but could not be found.

### Francis Jacobs

Francis Jacobs was brought in again to testify about another incident involving our three warriors.

Briere asked Jacobs, "Do you know the Mongeon Farm?"

Jacobs answered, "It's on Center Road at the fork of Pine Road, near the golf course. (He knows where it is.) Mr. and Mrs. Mongeon (called "Mo-John" by the Indians) live there with their two daughters. (He knows them.) They raise horses." During the summer crisis Jacobs went to visit the Mongeon Farm during the first week of August. Later he went there in the fourth week of August.

In the first week of August he received a call at home that a truck was parked in front of the Mongeon house.

"Corey and I checked it out. It's a half mile from my home. I arrived around suppertime. I saw the Mongeon's truck in front of the house, a blue four-wheel drive. I saw no one outside. The house is on the right side of the driveway and all the buildings are joined together. The horse track is at the back.

"We drove in and Roger Lazore came out of the house. I asked what he was doing there. Roger said, 'I'm minding the house for the Mo-Johns.' I asked if I can check the house to see if everything was alright."

Jacobs said Roger was wearing a black shirt and jeans. "I followed Roger, and Corey was behind me, into the porch and into the house. Gordon Lazore was sitting near the table, in his camo clothes. He must have been drinking beer because there were beer and wine bottles around.

"While sitting at the table, Gordon reached out to a gun near the wall and picked it up. It was an M16, the kind I saw on TV with a black handle. He pointed it to me and told me to get the hell out of there. Gordon spoke in a rough tone of voice.

"We left the same way we came in. I wasn't going to stay there and argue with him. Roger never said anything. We heard two girls giggling in the other room."

Roger showed Jacobs the keys to the Mongeon house and truck, and told Jacobs they were asked to take care of the house.

Jacobs said to Roger, "I hope it doesn't happen like Lemay's."

Roger said in a normal tone of voice, "Nothing will happen, I'm watching the house."

Jacobs continued, "I went back to my place and had supper. I did not know where the Mongeons were."

At this point Jacobs became confused about dates, referring to the subsequent August 31st incident as happening on September 31st.

Jacobs was asked why he went back to the Mongeon farm.

"We brought medication to someone. Then we drove near the farm and heard some screaming and yelling coming from there. There was a Channel 10 media van parked in the driveway. Two guys were standing in front of the van. We parked the ambulance behind it. Mr. Mongeon was screaming at three Indian girls, telling them to get out."

Mrs. Mongeon was coming around the house screaming hysterically at Roger and Gordon.

Roger, in a T-shirt and regular clothes, was calmly driving a tractor lawn mower and cutting the grass out front. Gordon, wearing camo, his M16 rifle strapped on his shoulder, was casually standing by the pickup truck near the barn, holding a gas can (smoking a cigarette, humming a tune, and minding his business).

Jacobs said that Gordon and Roger dropped everything and just left, walking down the driveway, into the sunset and disappeared into the bush (where it was safe).

Jacobs said two media people filmed the whole drama (the Mongeons had cooked up).

Dennis Nicholas arrived in his pickup truck in regular clothes and alone. He stood around for a while. Mrs. Mongeon came, and asked Ronnie Bonspille (who was there too) to go into the house. It was a mess with bottles and clothes all over. The kitchen had broken chairs, table and bottles all over the place.

Jacobs said he did not know why the media was there, "We did not call them."

Mr. and Mrs. Mongeon went into the barn and it looked alright. Jacobs stayed 10 to 15 minutes, and went back to the Food Bank between 5 and 6:00 pm.

The media arrived at the Food Bank and Jimmy Gabriel and Ronnie Bonspille enthusiastically gave interviews. Jacobs and his son Corey left after 8:00 pm and went patrolling until 2:30 am.

At 2:30 am (September 1) Jacobs and Corey were on the side of the road at St. Germain and 344 talking to Ronnie Bonspille and two other people. Jacobs related, "We talked for about 15 minutes. Then a pickup truck driven by Angus Nelson, with Morris Binette in the passenger side, pulled up

and several guys came out of the box in the back of the truck. Leroy Gabriel was also parked nearby in his pickup truck. They parked almost right beside Leroy Gabriel."

### The Fight

About eight people were at the intersection. Jacobs said, "Four guys came out of Angus Nelson's truck and someone ran towards my car. Ron Cross ran right in front of the car and pointed an M16 at us. I put my car in reverse and he told me to stop. They came around the passenger side of my car. I put the windows up and locked the doors."

Wincing, Jacobs said, "Morris, Gordon and another person went on the other side of the car. We tried to get away. Ron Cross turned the gun towards me and I heard a click. My son threw himself on the floor of the car. Ron Cross fired two shots in the air. He was the only one with a weapon."

Shaking, Jacobs said, "Ron Cross and Gordon broke the windows of the car, grabbed me and tried to pull me out of the car by the shoulder. They grabbed my son, started choking him inside the car and tried to pull him out. Some guys with masks hit him with a bat and the end of a gun. I was half way out of the car."

Catching his breath, Jacobs said, "Ron Cross started to hit me with the butt of the gun all over my head. Gordon started to jab me with the baseball bat he took from my car. We carried the bats on patrols. There was Ron hitting me with a gun, Gordon hitting me with the baseball bat and the masked men hitting my Corey on the head."

Briere asked if there was any damage to the car.

"Yes, the windows were all broken, the lights in front and back were smashed. Someone jumped on the roof."

"Why did this happen?"

"They were yelling that it was us who called the media. It wasn't us. They were already there when we got there." (So who set them up?)

"What happened then?"

"Ron Cross and I were struggling. Gordon hit me and I went back into the car. Three guys were trying to pull my son out of the car. Angus Nelson stood in the middle of the road laughing his head off at the free-for-all.



Friday night "war party" in Kanehsatake!

"Then we heard on the radio that the Warrior Security was coming over. Ronnie Bonspille then took off down St. Germain Road and someone yelled, 'Go get 'im!' I couldn't see because I had blood all over my face. Ronnie went to get the Army and SQ to come in and everybody chased after him (to stop him from bringing them in).

"The Warrior Security sent Scot Gabriel to drive us who needed first aid to the Food Bank. Other Warrior Security showed up and we sat down together and talked."

By this time, Owen and Julio realized that Crown Briere had not given them numerous declarations they needed to study before cross-examining witnesses. The absence of such evidence could create a gap in the defence. They protested to the Judge.

The Judge suspended the case until tomorrow morning so that Crown Briere could get his act together. The judge wanted to remove any unfairness and told defence lawyers they could recall Gerry Butch Etienne to be cross-examined again. Judge Greenberg remarked that he got his declarations from Briere as he was walking past Briere's office.

Tomorrow Francis Jacobs will be cross-examined by Owen and Julio.

The trial will not be on during the week of November 11th while Judge Greenberg goes on a European holiday.

Thursday, October 31, 1991  
Lies, Lies And More Lies

MINNS - Francis Jacobs of Kanehsatake has been the latest witness for the prosecution.

Crown Briere questioned Jacobs who said he and his son Corey were both under psychological treatment for stress and problems related to the events of the Mohawk Crisis of the Summer of 1990. (No wonder! Over their guilt and fear over what they did during the crisis, and over having to testify against the Mohawks.) Jacobs looked troubled and disturbed.

Owen brought up the issue of evidence being withheld by Crown Briere, such as photos and declarations of witnesses, which the defence has a right to have. There will be 27 Army witnesses and Owen and Julio are entitled to have the gist of their evidence. Also Corey Jacobs gave nine statements to the SQ and then withdrew from testifying. (Why?) The defence lawyers are entitled to these declarations.

Judge Greenberg told Briere to make these available to Owen and Julio, saying, "Trial by ambush is no longer being permitted, no surprises that will put them at a disadvantage will be allowed."

Regarding Dennis Nicholas, Crown Briere said, "I met him but I do not know what he will say."

The testimony of Francis Jacobs continued. His voice got softer and lower as the day wore on. He stood there in his loose jeans, light brown jacket and oversized cowboy boots, leaning heavily on the dainty witness box.

Jacobs said that after the fight (at Oka Corral), he was brought by Scot Gabriel to the Food Bank and met with two warriors and Dennis Nicholas. Linda Simon treated his wounds. He visited Willie Nelson's place, a member of the

Citizen's Patrol, for about 2 hours. Dennis Nicholas came afterwards and stayed there for a while. Then Jacobs figured it was safe and went to the barricades.

Briere asked, "What made you left by the barricades?"

"What?" asked Jacobs.

"What made you leave?"

"Oh. Willie told us they were still coming after us."

"Who?"

"The people sitting behind me (pointing to the three warriors in the prisoners dock). I went to St. Germain (to call the Army in) to go by ambulance to the hospital in St. Eustache. I got four stitches over my eye." This was at 5:00 am.

Jacobs got very confused. He explained that he and Corey were presently seeing a psychologist together (healing together). First he said they don't go together, that they went to the doctor's office, and then that the psychologist came to the house. (He's just trying to prove how much he needs one.)

Jacobs said the damage to his car cost \$4,500 to repair. (He should have brought it to Kahnawake for cheap repairs.)

He added that Roger Lazore was among the crowd that assaulted him. "Roger did not do anything to me. I saw him when the guys jumped out of the truck. I don't know how he was dressed because everything happened so fast." His description of the fight sounded like the *Battle of Little Big Horn* with everything flying all over the place.

Briere asked, "How could you tell it was Roger Lazore?"

"From the way he looks, with his moustache and short hair."

Julio Peris cross-examined Jacobs. "Your August 16th declaration, is this the first time you've seen it since you signed it?"



"I might have seen it on Tuesday this week before I testified. When I made it, it was read back to me by the police. I don't know their names. It concerns Steve Nelson. (It looks like Jacobs was snitching on everybody!) I cannot read too well. If it is printed, I can read some of it."

"All declarations are read back. You should pay close attention to what was read back. Do you understand the effect of the declaration?"

"Yup." said Jacobs softly.

The Judge had to keep asking Jacobs to speak up.

Jacobs said he made this declaration at home, but on the declaration it showed he signed it in St. Eustache. (He must have been going back and forth often to see the SQ during the crisis.)

Julio asked, "Why did you go to St. Eustache to meet Mr. Hebert of the SQ?"

"He wanted to see me to get information I had about Mr. Ayer's house and Steve Nelson."

"Were you called by Mr. Hebert of the SQ because you were suspected of breaking into Mr. Ayer's house?"

Crown Briere jumped to his feet, waving his arms around, and got the jury and witness out of the room. He said, "I don't want a fishing expedition. There were accusations throughout the community that everybody was involved in the break-ins!" (Ah-ha! it finally came out.)

But the Judge said he felt the question was put legally and properly.

An observer from Kanehsatake said, "This rat was ratting on us before and the whole time we were in TC. All the while he was working with Warrior Security he was working with the SQ. He's been talking to them since day one!"

An intuitive supporter from Montreal monitoring the trial said, "The truth is coming out. I sense he is lying and was

lying all along!"

The cross-examination of Jacobs continued.

Julio said, "You were in St. Eustache with Mr. Hebert of the SQ. Why were you brought in?"

Jacobs answered that he and Ronnie Bonspille met Mr. Hebert when they brought the stuff that had been stolen (by whom?) to the police station. Jacobs said that he and Bonspille were storing the goods and kept an inventory (a likely story!).

"But why did you make an accusation against Steve Nelson?"

"When we brought the stuff over to St. Eustache, we met Mr. Hebert. They were asking some questions, and Bonspille gave a statement. Then I told Hebert about Steve Nelson being at the Ayer's place."

"On September 1st the assault occurred and you met with police. There is nothing mentioned about Lemay's in this declaration, why?"

"I don't know."

Jacobs and Ronnie Bonspille went to the police station on September 1st after the assault for the morning and part of the afternoon. Jacobs then said he saw Hebert on September 1st who came to his house in Kanehsatake!

### Jacobs Caught "Red Handed"

On September 12th two SQ police officers came to Jacobs's house to take a written declaration concerning Lemay, because they thought Jacobs had taken some goods from a few houses in Jardin Oka. Jacobs said, "They asked about different things that happened to the places that were broken into."

Jacobs said he took goods and stored them in his and Bonspille's places. (So-o maybe he got caught and turned it

over to the police and made a deal, eh!)

He had objects of Pierre Belisle, whom he knew because he cut trees for him (is that why he's so loyal to him), and from Rosere Lamouche's he took bottles of liquor and wine, a Pioneer sound system, and a stereo system, which Joe David asked him to bring to his place (to fill orders?). He also had some generators from the Belisle place.

"We were to deliver some to the police station." Bonspille had no more room and so Jacobs stored them at his place.

Jacobs was getting more confused and took longer pauses before answering. He said the SQ told him to take the stuff and store it at their depot on Industrial Boulevard.

On September 13th Jacobs made yet another declaration and described Roger Lazore. (Somehow he managed to see Roger in places where Roger was not.)

On the third visit the police showed Jacobs ten coloured photos of people who came out of TC and asked if he knew them.

Julio asked, "How many did you recognize?"

"The three people sitting behind me. I met Roger a few days after July 11th. I knew him by name because he was going out with my friend's niece."

"Did you call someone in Akwesasne for a description of Roger?"

"Yes. I had to make sure it was the same person I identified to the police (on the September 13th declaration), because of what happened to us at the September 1st fight. I did not know his name before then."

Jacobs had said that Roger Lazore was 35 years old, 5 ft. 6 in., curly black hair, with no moustache or beard.

Julio said, "You took great pain to explain to the policeman how you knew Roger by name, when you signed that declaration. Did this help to put a face to the name?"

"It might have."

"And was it read back to you as you described him?"

"Yes."

"So how is it you described Roger without a moustache? You did not know what Roger Lazore looked like, or what his name was?"

"That's right."

"How do you explain that you knew his name and face several days before when you described him definitely coming out of the Lemay's?"

"I might have made a mistake." (The whole thing could have been a big mistake).

An observer said, "Jacobs's mistake is listening to the cops. He got sucked into it through pressure by the SQ."

Another observation was why the Citizens Patrol and the home owners didn't board up the houses if they were protecting them?

Jacobs had meetings with the SQ before testifying at the preliminary hearing on October 24, 1991. "Mr. Hebert came to my house about one and a half weeks ago and showed me the declaration and the transcript of the preliminary hearing." (to refresh his memory and give him some coaching)

Julio continued, "Gordon Lazore never directly pointed a gun at you, but at the floor, when you were inside the Mongeon house on the first visit, and you did not see any damage."

"No."

"You came back to the Mongeon place on October 31st, saw Roger on a tractor lawn mower cutting Mr. Mongeon's grass. Gordon is beside the truck. Then Mr. and Mrs. Mongeon arrive and the media was already there. (How did media get on the territory when no one else could get in? Someone must have set it up!) Mr. Mongeon came from the

kitchen, the three Indian girls were arguing with Mrs. Mongeon and the two daughters."

"I came there when I heard the yelling and screaming. I only saw the bedroom and kitchen. Corey was outside. Roger and Gordon had left. Dennis and a few other guys arrived."

"The first time you were there, when you spoke to Roger, his tone of voice was normal, he said 'Come inside.' You never said anything about Roger at Lemay's."

Julio then returned to the tussle at the 344 Crossroads.

Jacobs said, "Four people got out of the truck. One person with a mask. Cross was wearing grey jogging pants and a t-shirt. Gordon was wearing camo pants and a hat. Roger was wearing jeans or a t-shirt. I did not look at his moustache, but I looked at his face."

"Your attention was constantly on Ron Cross. Gordon had nothing in his hand?"

"I don't know. I saw a gun in Cross's hand when he got close, pointing the gun right in front of my car at me."

"When you saw Cross, did you dive for the seat?"

"I tried to get out when he got in front of the car. I heard, 'We'll fix you.' Then I heard the click of the gun and three shots went off. It was the sound of pulling the trigger and it was loud enough to hear."

"But the windows were closed and you were reversing."

"But I stopped." (to listen)

Julio said, "They swarmed all over the car, in front and back, and screaming and yelling."

"I don't know." (This is where Jacobs was getting cornered.)

Jacobs said that that's when they broke the windows, on the back, front and both sides, with the guns and bats. No one had been touched at this point.

"How did they get the bats if the windows were locked?" (good question!)

Jacobs, ignoring this obvious question, said, "We had the bats to protect ourselves. Corey took the long one from the floor and I got the half cut one (obviously a weapon). Gord took it away from me and I got hit with it." It was bats, butts, flying glass, scuffling, and yelling for the next few minutes.

Jacobs described the scene, "I tried to grab the bat. I was hit with the rifle butt by Ron Cross, and Gordon hit me with the small bat, and threw it into the weeds (which he never retrieved). Then suddenly everyone left." (A traditional Mohawk assault, hit and disappear!)

Julio asked, "Why did they do this?"

Jacobs said everyone was mad because they had been sold out and the media was called in.

Julio said, "They were mad because you and Bonspille were going around blaming the warriors for the break-ins?"

"Yes, Morris Binette and Ron Cross were saying that."

Julio continued, in the midst of Jacobs's confusion, "Once everyone leaves, Scot Gabriel, in regular clothes, arrives and drives you to the Food Bank. Now, on your September 1st declaration you said that after they left, quote, 'Willie Nelson and Robin Harding took us to the gym.' What made you change your mind?"

"I probably didn't remember at the time when the police were asking me questions. I wasn't lying when I told them that! It was weeks later when I started to remember what happened to us." (He's twisted himself into a pretzel here.)

Julio found yet another declaration, that Briere had been withholding, where Jacobs identified Gordon and Roger Lazore on September 25th as those who had hit him and his son Corey with a firearm and baseball bat. "You testified previously that Roger did not hit you. This declaration was

read back to you?"

"I guess so." Jacobs said he had not asked the policeman to correct it. "I don't remember what happened. I don't know if Roger did anything."

Red-faced, Briere jumped up again trying to rescue his witness. "He says he got the names mixed up!"

So far there are eight or nine declarations signed by Francis Jacobs and six by Corey Jacobs. The Judge ordered a short break.

After the break, the questioning was suspended because Owen and Julio said Briere had no right to run into the hall, coach Jacobs, and come back into court to object to the cross-examination.

Crown Briere wanted to resurrect his witness by getting Jacobs to say he was "illiterate" (rather than a "fibber"). Briere said, "During the break I asked him to read a document and found he cannot read." He acted astounded and excited and tried to get the jury's sympathy by pointing this out to them. (A good example of the Quebec Court's standard dishonesty and theatrics.)

Well, Jacobs is such a liar he even lied about the fact he cannot read. If he can't read, then he would remember events better. Didn't he perjure himself when he said he could read but could not. Also, he could be lying about his illiteracy!

The trial continues ...

## Friday, November 1, 1991 Nothing But The Truth

MNNS - The Crown witnesses today were Francis *Stretching the Truth* Jacobs of Kanehsatake, a New York Telephone Employee (with a British accent), and Mr. *Mo-John* Mongeon of Oka.

One mature Mohawk supporter was asked to remove her colourful hat. At one time women had to wear a hat in court and church. When did it change? (we asked!)

Next week Canadian Armed Forces will be testifying. There will be 40 in all. This is part of the line-up of Canada's finest: Mussolini da Mariano (Italian. What if something serious happens!), Stefan Tremblay, Marc Laroi, Jean Francois Levesque, Maitre Piche, Pascal Nadeau, Pierre La Pierre, Plumber Lanouette, Marc Blackboard, Eric Keyboard (who will sing for the Crown), Marc Brodeau, Dani Ruler, Alain *Weird Al* Tremblay, Daniel Leroyer and Martin Rudy Vallee.

Before everyone was awake in the courtroom, Crown Pro' Briere jumped up and threw his chair on the floor, picked it up and sat back down! He had on his raggedy olive green pants again. They hung over his worn out tattered penny loafers (without the pennies), the heels worn down beyond repair and the soles beginning to flap.

Owen Young and Julio Peris, lawyers for the defendants, were well dressed with polished shoes, smoothly shaved chins and nice haircuts. (That's their culture.) Lasagna, the defendant, was fashionable in camo pants and a Mickey Mouse sweat shirt. (He doesn't work for the AFN.)

Because of the bad day Jacobs had yesterday, Briere did not want his witness to be cross-examined anymore. Briere wanted to find a way for Jacobs to escape any responsibility



for lying by playing up on Jacobs's claims to illiteracy. (Why doesn't Briere just admit his carefully coached witness bombed out? For all we know, Jacobs could be faking not being able to read to get people's sympathy.)

### Citizen Patrollers Doing Break-Ins

To Briere's efforts to keep Jacobs out of the witness box, Judge Greenberg decreed, "I don't agree. Jacobs is a key witness in all the charges. Citizen Patrollers were suspected by the police of breaking into homes, and pointing the finger at someone else."

Francis Jacobs was called again to be questioned by Owen Young, lawyer for the defendants.

Owen asked Jacobs about the volunteer citizens patrol system of taking goods out of the white peoples' houses.

Jacobs said, "The Committee of Concerned People met to sanction the patrols that Ronnie Bonspille and others put together at the end of July, after the July 11th raid by the SQ on the People of the Pines."

"From what I understand rules and procedures were not discussed, and there was never any other meeting of the people. (It was each man for himself, and good luck!) The goods were taken to your place and then to Bonspille's, where a list was made, checked and signed."

"That's right, but I don't remember Bonspille giving papers to the police." (when they went to see the SQ on August 16)

The Committee and the warriors did not know that after August 16th the goods were being taken to Jacobs's place and then to Ronnie Bonspille's. Jacobs felt they knew. (through osmosis?) He saw Dennis Nicholas many times but did not discuss what was going on.

"There was no more room at Bonspille's, and we had to

get the goods out because the Red Cross was coming in." Bonspille ran the ambulance service on the reserve.

When Owen asked where the list was, Jacobs said that when he left his place he lost a lot of papers including the list (just by chance!).

Briere jumped up and accused Owen of putting words into Jacobs's mouth. (Jacobs doesn't need any help.)

Owen continued the cross-examination, "At the very time you were in the fight the warriors were saying, 'You are accusing us of these break-ins. You called the media to Mo-John's, and you are doing the break-ins and blaming us.'"

Jacobs said he heard them saying this.

"Why did this fight take place?"

"They said I was mixed up in the break-ins."

"On September 1st you took a beating and you were taken back to the Food Bank, where you met Dennis Nicholas. Was there a problem getting food through the Army lines?" (At the end of August the Army was around Kanehsatake.)

"There was food coming in from Hudson and Six Nations during that period."

"But tension was building up."

Jacobs agreed. The Army put the squeeze on after the September 1st fight. That's when Bonspille jumped into his car and sped off from the fight to the Army barricades at the end of St. Germain, code-named "North Pole", with the other guys in hot pursuit.

"Was it after that fight that the Army moved in?"

"Yes."

"Yesterday you talked about a declaration to the SQ on August 16th, which was prepared in St. Eustache, where you signed it?"

"That's right."

"You met with the police officer alone. He asked questions and wrote on the piece of paper."

"The policeman showed it to me and read it back."

"You never said anything about the printing. Did you tell him you could not read it?"

"No." Then Jacobs thinking real hard closing his eyes like he was praying remembered, "He read it aloud."

"The August 16th declaration had to do with Steve Nelson. You said you could not read it ... that the document was read out to you by the police officer."

Jacobs went brain dead, and then remembered the opposite. "No, it wasn't read out to me. That's false."

(Jacobs had said yesterday it was read out to him. Today Jacobs said no one ever read it to him, either then or before the preliminary inquiry and this trial.)

Owen continued, "The September 1st declaration about the fight was written down as you told him, then after he handed it to you, you signed it without reading it. You said that Ron Cross and Gordon Lazore had paint on their faces, and the two others had masks on."

"Yes."

"You were trying to tell the SQ what you remembered?"

"Yes."

"It is important to be accurate and truthful. You knew you were signing an important piece of paper. Because you don't read, you tend to pay close attention to a document being read to you?"

Jacobs interjected, "The officer wrote it down wrong." (Those monstrous SQ!)

"You said there were four guys, three you recognized and one had a mask on. Is it possible you got mixed up?"

"No, I could have on September 1st, but not now."

Owen kept circling around his prey, "Yesterday you said it

was Scot Gabriel, who took you to the Food Bank, and on the declaration you said it was Willie Nelson and Robin Harding who took you there. You now say the officer got it all wrong on September 1st."

Critically wounded, Jacobs said he could have made a mistake.

"Since the time you made the declaration, you have had numerous meetings with the Crown and SQ about the case."

(Jacobs had a hard time keeping his story straight. He remembered what happened, but he couldn't remember his lies or what he was supposed to say. So he blamed the SQ for all the inconsistencies. His coaching didn't work out. If Jacobs could read, they could have had cue cards for him.)

Owen continued, "On September 25th you were at the SQ identifying photographs. The officer wrote out something for you to sign. The SQ came to your house with pictures."

"They showed me some photos and asked if I knew any of them."

He knew two. His declaration read, "It is the two guys who beat me and my son Corey with baseball bats and firearms." This too had not been read back to him.

"What you said on September 25th is different from what you said at the trial?"

Briere jumped up to object to his witness being cornered.

But Owen aiming well continued, "Yesterday you said the document was read out to you."

"I'm not sure of this."

"Gordon Lazore took your little baseball bat from your hand, which you were going to hit him with, and instead he hit you with it! Was your September 1st statement not true?"

"It might have been."

"What you told the police officer was untrue?"

Jacobs looking like a dying man said, "I don't know how

it came to be untrue." Taking a deep breath, "I'm not saying I know exactly what happened."

"And you have it mixed up as to all the people who were there."

Jack-in-the-Box Briere jumped up, "Unfair, unfair!" In a desperate attempt for his witness to save face Briere held up a card in front of Jacobs's face and tried to get Jacobs to read. The Judge would have none of this and brought the court to order.

Owen decided to pull out all the plugs, "How is it possible that one day you changed your evidence about who was there on September 1st. What happened to make you change your mind? Now you say that parts of it are true and parts of it were read to you, and other parts weren't."

Jacobs, whose memory had a final seizure, said he was not sure if it was read to him at the time of the declarations or before he came into court.

"You had a misunderstanding, but did not want to clear it up."

Jacobs, neck muscles stiffening up, said he and Corey were going to a psychologist for treatment. (Maybe a white psychologist can help him out by declaring him ridiculous). Jacobs hurried out of the court room, tripping on his oversized cowboy boots, muttering he was going to find his psychologist quick!

A supporter from Akwesasne remarked, "Francis Jacobs is originally from Akwesasne, and during the Mohawk Crisis in 1990, it was the warriors who were trying to stop Francis and Ronnie Bonspille from breaking into the houses."

One clan mother sold out in minutes all her copies of the *Peoples' Voice* which carries daily coverage of "the truth" of the St. Jerome trials.

George Andrews, a New York Telephone Company representative in an indescribable brown suit was on the witness stand. The calls that were made from Lemay's house on August 9th were to the *Blarney Inn*, (212) 974-9060, at 768-9th Avenue, New York; and to Mary Ann Cook, (212) 330-0732, at 380 State Street, Apartment 2, Brooklyn. That's all he had to say and took the next plane back to New York.

### Mo-John Mongeon

The next crown witness was Dr. *Mo-John* Mongeon. At 43 he is short with a ruddy complexion and moustache. He lives at 1 Center Road on 66 arpents (of former Mohawk land), 1,000 feet from "le gulf". He breeds horses and has a veterinary clinic in Oka. His testimony is in French. The following dialogue is a translation of it.

Mo-John said he lived on his farm until August 27th.

Briere asked, "Did you have warriors at your residence?"

Mo-John replied, "We saw warriors since March 1990, and they came on the farm on August 6th, 1990. Our farm is near one of the barricades on Center Road. After the July 11th attack, we had 70 horses and our clients could no longer come to the farm. There was no food and our employees could not come in. Starting on August 6th we evacuated the horses and the employees who were staying in the apartments at the stables. On August 6th I gave the warriors permission to stay in the apartments in the stables."

He proudly described the luxurious apartments and stables. (His horses live better than most Indians in Canada).

At this time *Pa Kettle* Paquette, the Judge's gofor, fell asleep and almost slid off his chair (a gauge of some kind). Paquette prefers listening to Indian witnesses. Their stories keep him awake.

Mo-John continued, "My two daughters and employees left with the horses (in the covered wagon for the east). My daughter, Vicky, wanted to stay behind with the warriors, but I wouldn't let her. (a hah!) We left five pregnant horses (Don't blame that on the warriors!) which could have aborted from such a move."

Briere asked Mo-John, "Who were you dealing with?"

"From August 6th to 27th, I dealt with a warrior called 'Major' who said since we were leaving they would take care of the property. He was usually masked. We were obliged to lend our place. It was that or gun shots. (Now, now!) Major was a gentleman." Mo-John described him as an ordinary guy, dark skin, dark eyes, English speaking, not very big, 140 to 150 pounds, 5 ft. 7 in. to 5 ft. 8 in. in height, and that he was not in the courtroom today. One day he disappeared and was never seen again.

"What about the warriors who were staying in the manger?"

"Everything was always clean and the beds were always made. My apartments were fully equipped."

On August 26th Mo-John went to the stables and found about ten or more men and women there having a party, drinking beer, laughing and giggling. (It was a hot August night). He met Roger Lazore partying and having fun. Mo-John said he did not want to get involved in the party. (His wife was back in the house.)

In a firm voice Roger told Mo-John, "Things are getting tight. I think the Army is going to move in. Before that, we're having a party because the end is close. You should leave by tomorrow because we cannot assure your protection. Otherwise you will go down with us." Roger spoke about how the negotiations were going. There were ongoing violent exchanges of words between the warriors and the Army who

were both on his property.

Mo-John was about to leave on August 27th at noon, when Roger Lazore, in warrior fatigues with a weapon strapped to his back, came to the house. Roger asked Mo-John to lend them his truck. There may be a battle coming up and the truck could be used to carry the wounded to the community center. Mo-John told Roger to take it.



Mr. Mo-John, can we have your truck to carry the wounded?

Roger also asked Mo-John to keep the house unlocked so that the warriors would not have to break in if they needed to use the house. Roger promised that they would take care of the property. Mo-John left for a hotel in Laval leaving the house and apartments unlocked at the request of Roger Lazore.

On August 28th Mo-John called a lady on Annunciation Road in Oka who told him the alarm system at his house had gone off. Mo-John went to the SQ barricades and was refused entry.

Mo-John, his wife and two daughters were finally allowed in on August 31st. They arrived at the property between 4:30 and 5:00 pm. Things didn't look good.

"The first person I saw was Roger calmly riding on the tractor lawn mower cutting my grass. Windows were broken,



kitchen chairs were broken and on the lawn. There was also an Indian lady coming out of the house, who asked me what I was doing there and told me not to go into my house because it was a mess.

"I could not believe what I saw! I went into the house. I asked Roger, 'Did you have something to do with this?'"

"Roger said, 'No. I'm here to clean up the mess.'"

"I screamed at Roger, 'You fucking asshole. I am going into my house, and if I get my gun, I'm going to shoot you!'"

"Then three more young Indian women came out of the house. Warriors stood on the road in front of the house, with guns in hand. Two other warriors were coming in my pickup.

"I yelled, 'Leave my truck. You no longer have a right to my truck!'"

"There was a general ruckus. We chased the women from our property. My neighbour, a senior citizen, Binette, heard us screaming and came over. Five minutes later Ronnie Bonspille and Francis Jacobs arrived from the other direction. They heard the commotion going on at my place. Dennis Nicholas also came from the barricades on foot, while the other Indians hid in the bushes.

"Nicholas asked me if I had asked for media coverage. I told him I had.

"I was furious with Roger Lazore. He had guaranteed that my property would be taken care of. I thought I had bought protection! On the 31st I realized it was a monumental farce. They were laughing at me. It was no time to laugh. (No one recalls laughing at Mo-John).

"We were seen as warrior partisans (could be why the Army or SQ messed Mo-John's house, and then let him back in and arranged the media coverage). Everybody was bitter against the white people who live on the reserve. The Army parked 100 feet from the house, and on the other side the

warriors, all shouting verbal abuses at each other."

The truck was damaged and cost \$4,000 to repair. It was not dirty, but needed work on the electrical wiring. Inside the truck Mo-John found knives, food, blankets, all sorts of junk, chain saw, wrenches, and tools from his shed.

Mo-John said he did not authorize anyone to use his lawn tractor which was in the shed with the key left in the ignition. Also missing were tools, a drill, gas generator, shovels, and radiology machine. The apartment was destroyed and the television taken. His residence was damaged, household appliances and the kitchen set were broken, the bar, freezer and pantry had been emptied. The Microwave, television, VCR were missing. He estimated his losses at \$200,000.

Mo-John said he has nothing against Indians. "At first I was one of the biggest supporters, and always respected what they wanted. I respected what they did up to that day when they did not respect what I was doing. Everything fell apart!"

Mo-John found some of his missing property at the SQ Depot on Industrial Boulevard in St-Eustache. (They were taken there by the Citizens Patrol.)

The court room is full of unknown non-Indian observers, sitting around the room in the shadows like ghosts. We need some our own (Indian ghosts) there.

A clan mother was there today and said, "What do you think of Francis Jacobs's testimony? Well, he is mixed up. He is a Christian (because he swears on the holy bible), and might be paid by the government, or something like that! We were like that before (in Kahnawake), but now we are standing up to it.

"He isn't going to have anymore friends. No one is going to trust him again. Why do Indians do that? Because he doesn't know any better. He might have been poor all his life,

and then the police could put him up to it, because they want us in trouble.

"Unless he publicly admits what he did to his people, that he was wrong, he won't have any friends. In a way, he is dumb!

"The police and the government have been using our people all along like this. They keep you religious, then they get you educated by religious people so that we don't know better.

"The court did not look at his education! They did not ask him what school he went to, what grade did he finish. Why? Anybody can pretend to be unable to read or not understand right from wrong. But now you can't be that dumb! You can even learn from TV. Even little kids know all those things.

"Today, since we went back to the Great Law, even if you can't read, everybody is educated. My father and mother could not read or write, and nobody thought they were dumb. They were tough and knew everything. That Briere treated him like he was retarded because he can't read. In Indian society, we don't think somebody is dumb because they can't read. Other things make you dumb, like white man's religion."

Monday, November 4, 1991

## Commentary: Railroading Our Warriors

MINNS - The trial reveals more clearly that the Crown witnesses, Evelyn *Maid Marion* Diabo, Gerry *Butcher the Truth* Etienne, Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs, and George *Grand Klan Chief* Martin, all of Kanehsatake, were all part of a "sting operation" to railroad our three warriors.

The Singing Jacobs-Etienne-Martin Trio have been given a "Get Out of Jail Free" card to testify against Cross-Lazore-Lazore.

The slander by Etienne, Jacobs and Martin is an example of what the Canadian and Quebec governments will resort to in order to keep on track the railroading of Cross, Lazore and Lazore in the court room of Judge Greenberg.

The government doesn't appear to have much of a case so far, although it must be paying a lot of taxpayers' money to their witnesses to testify against these three. The case, in fact, is shockingly weak!

The government's concern is to prevent any information that is damaging to the federal and Quebec government from coming out at the trial. Canada and Quebec acted like Hitler when it attacked the People of the Pines. So far, no evidence of government wrong-doing has been allowed to be introduced.

It was a sting operation. Ron *Robin Hood* Bonspille and his *Merry Men* were merrily tearing around in the pine forests of Kanehsatake visiting the evacuated houses of non-Indians. *Somebody* broke into them, and they kindly sorted through and took the goods for storage. We still don't know how much was turned over to the SQ, but there was cooperation going on between the rat patrol and the SQ.

The confiscation of goods looked legitimate because the

houses had been broken into. Remember, the Army was ever present throughout the territory, watching and filming everything that was going on. As well, remember that it was handy for both the rat patrol and the SQ to blame the warriors, because they wanted the submission and destruction of the warriors.

At the same time other pressure tactics were applied - cutting off food and medicine; constant declarations by the politicians and their minions that the warriors were criminals and terrorists (which they were going to prove by setting them up); threats that the Army was coming in; and an impending obliteration of the warriors "as a model for the resolution of the Indian problem". The objective was to allow Canada's continued dictatorship over the First Nations Indians.

The proof is that since this crisis there has been devastation of the Mohawk economy and image. The action of the SQ and Canadian Army (*Soldiers of Misfortune*) were governed by no principles or rules that anyone will take responsibility for. Laying seige and starving out the Mohawk people was made appropriate and acceptable.

But can the Canadian conscience be clear if a whole nation is starved and threatened into submission? Can the Canadian conscience be clear if the principle victims are the women, children, men, the old, the young, and the innocent?

Canada says it is their right to tell us how to rule our nations. If we don't heed them, they say it is their right to destroy and overthrow our economy, impoverish our people, and kill us if necessary. Canada latches onto various crutches such as "human rights" and "environmental issues" in order to continue its imposition of colonial rule on us.

And they were helped by the media. When the Crown questions their witnesses and the negative testimony comes out about our three warriors, it is prominently reported on the

front pages where the public can't miss it. The following day, when our lawyers cross-examine and wipe out the Crown witnesses, the small story appears somewhere in the back pages so the public doesn't pay much attention to it.

The suffering of the Mohawk people must be alleviated and the threats and intimidation by the RCMP and SQ death squads that surround the territories must be removed immediately.

From the beginning to the present, the trials have been a farce, crafted to get rid of the warriors who defended the land and the people. Canada sent its troops to carry out mass murder against the Mohawk People in an unprovoked war of aggression. It is time that the many supporters of the Mohawk people spoke out against this outrage and went after Canada's most prominent terrorists, Brian Mulroney and Robert Bourassa.

## Monday, November 4, 1991 The Army's First Assault

MNNS - The trial continued with the Crown testimonies of Dr. Mo-John Mongeon, a Bell Telephone Repairman, an Undercover Policewoman (who stayed undercover), young Robert Bonspiel and Angus Nelson.

On Monday morning the St. Jerome court house is always full with a lot of customers or victims herded in by the police. Lots of business for the court, the police, the lawyers and other system workers.

Crown Prosecutor Briere hasn't quite recovered from the death of his evidence on Friday when Owen Young and Julio Peris wiped out Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs, his main witness to "put Lasagna away". On Friday, Briere actually choked and ran out of breath during the final cross-examination. (And no one jumped up to revive him.)

Dr. Mo-John was back on the stand.

Julio, lawyer for the warriors, opened, "While we were watching the Oka crisis on the television, you were watching it through your living room window, up to August 26th. You had Canadian Army soldiers on one side of your house and Mohawk warriors on the other side, facing each other."

Mo-John said, "Yes, the tanks came for the first time around July 20th, a Saturday."

"Were they assault tanks?"

"Yes, there were troops with them as well." His property was considered warrior occupied territory. When the assault tanks came on July 20th, it was the first time the Army came near the house. Before that Mo-John had seen only tank tracks on the property. "After that we asked the Army not to come back on our farm and not to endanger our lives."



Sunday afternoon at Mo-John's.

"You speak of a violent exchange of words between you and the Mohawk warriors and the Army."

Mo-John said the only time he spoke with the Army was on July 20th. "The warriors told us that the Army had no business on our property. My wife went to see the soldiers and told them to leave. The Army did not respond. We were nervous and stressed."

Mo-John said there were threats of violence, and tension was building up. Violent words were spoken, indicating the buildup of nervous exchanges.

Briere interjected and said that this line of questioning was not relevant.

Julio said, "We are trying to get the whole general atmosphere."

Judge Greenberg agreed it was relevant because of the charges of uttering death threats between September 6th and 25th.

Owen Young, also lawyer for the warriors, added, "We have to examine incidents on both sides to see the buildup of stresses."

Julio continued questioning Mo-John, "When you were talking about a violent exchange of words, was it at the end of July?"



"Yes. In the morning I had left to do some cases. I returned shortly before the tanks arrived on the property. An Indian woman came by and wanted to take the back road on my farm. When the lady was going out, she saw the tank coming towards her. She went to the warrior barricades near my place. That is when three or four warriors came towards the house. Then I came out of my clinic and saw the tank coming on the other side of my house. On one side there were warriors and on the other side there were soldiers. My wife came out.

"There was a warrior who told my wife to go see the Army and tell them they broke the agreement that was made with the Warrior Society and the Army, and that the Army should stay back in their position.

"My wife went to talk with the soldiers. The warriors were nervous but did not yell. On July 20th my mother-in-law and sister-in-law were in the house to do the accounting for the month end.

"My wife told the soldiers, 'You have no right to be here if you cannot give us the security. You being here puts us in a bad position. I would like you to leave. The Indians let us go anywhere we like.' My wife told me this and she is not a liar.

"The Army came in and they stopped by my house for five minutes. They didn't get off their tanks. They pointed their weapons at the Mohawks, and we were between them. Then they kept on going very slowly off my property."

Julio asked, "Can you describe the scene that unfolded in front of your home? How many assault tanks were around your house?"

"On July 20th three soldiers were around in combat fatigues and there were also Mohawk warriors. The Army assault tanks were on the North Side about 300 feet from us, which was considered Mohawk territory. The soldiers

pointed their cannons from their tanks toward the house. In between was our house, and on the south side were the warriors, 50 to 100 feet from the house. My house was in the line of fire with the soldiers pointing their arms at the warriors, but the guns were not in a firing position. In a tank, you can always stand up with a submachine gun in hand. The warriors were in warrior dress, they also had their guns in hand, but were not pointing toward the Army to fire."

"When this incident unfolded before you, you could not hear any exchange of words?"

"The Army did not say anything. I heard a few words coming from the warriors while watching this."

"Were you getting a sense of nervousness of the warriors?"

"Yes. We felt the tension. It was very very high. It ended, and the tank continued to drive towards the exit at the back of our farm. And the warriors went back towards the barricades."

"During August there was a building up of tension and exchange of violent words."

"But there were never any violent words by the warriors towards us."

Julio asked Mo-John to explain his observation of the increase of tension among the Mohawks. "Can you explain the conversation you had with Roger Lazore about an assault coming and assault tank movements on your property?"

Mo-John recalled, "I don't remember the exact words. Mr. Lazore told me the Army was not respecting its position, that the final attack was coming and they could not ensure our protection any longer."

"Were shots fired on your property?"

"Very often. I told Roger Lazore there was too many gun shots. Lazore told me, 'We are not responsible for them.' I

heard shots that prevented us from sleeping night after night. There were days I would go outside and I would hear some shooting regularly."

"Were they coming from different directions?"

"I could not say where it was coming from."

"Were you far from Lemay's house?"

"About a half mile."

"Were the shots coming from that direction?"

"There was an echo in the area and you could not tell where they were coming from."

"After September the Army came onto your property?"

"We had left and stayed at the Relax Hotel in Laval. I came back home and the Army had been there since after that ruckus on August 31st. There was at least ten tanks in the yard and 50 troops or so. But no warriors."

"Did you see any warriors from September 1st on your farm?"

"No."

"Did you see any confrontations between the warriors and the Army from that period on?"

"No. There were only soldiers on my property. We talked to them. They made us sign papers to take the farm from us. They never asked for our permission. They were there when I arrived. On September 2nd they introduced us to the military guys who said they were going to cause damage but would reimburse us. We had no choice but to accept. I accepted as I had loaned the property to the warriors. There were no Army trenches around the property. They stayed for one month and I stayed there at the same time. I heard shots during the night through the whole month of September."

"Were they single shots, or long periods when many shots were fired?"

"Mixed. Sometimes it was one or two shots, or four or

five, or six all at once. Lots of shots were fired around the farm during the month of September." (It wasn't the warriors because they were holed up in TC.)

Mo-John continued, "They were close shots, but (backing off) I never saw a soldier firing a shot." He could not tell where they were coming from.

Julio asked, "On August 26th, is it not a fact that Roger Lazore told you that they were about to be attacked?"

"Yes."

"During the party in the apartments Lazore told you, 'Tomorrow at six we are going to be attacked.'"

"Yes."

"Roger Lazore said if you stayed with them you would get blown up too."

"Correct."

"What was told to you is that the end was near, that movements of tanks, tension and pressure was building up, soldiers were near, and the end was near."

"Exactly!"

"The conversation you had on August 27th was about getting your truck the following day."

"Correct."

"Roger tells you, 'We are going to be attacked. We are going to need your truck to transport the wounded. We need your truck.' You could see the tension in the people."

"Sure."

"Roger never spoke aggressively with you. He always spoke in a normal tone."

"Yes."

"Before you left, he asks you to leave the door unlocked."

"Yes."

"You left the alarm system on. Did you understand possibly people would be going inside your house?"

"Yes. I imagined some people could come inside the house. I put it on to know when they would come and what would happen, because I had told my neighbour we were leaving. Deep down I had hopes no one would go in."

"What about the horses, the five gestating mares?"

"Roger Lazore asked if I wanted him to take care of them. I said no. Every day after that I tried to go see them and the Army never let us go. I could feel the tension. That is why I left. I could not endure it anymore."

"You did not want to be in the house when the war breaks out?"

"I could no longer stay there." For two months he had witnessed from his living room window the tensions between the warriors and the Army ... and then there was the tension between him and his wife.

Julio said, "When you heard about your alarm going off, you had horses on the farm. You wanted to see the damage done to your property. You return. Roger Lazore is calmly cutting the grass. You shout, 'I am going to kill you', and you said that to the other warriors that were there. You are not a violent man. The tension was just too much. If you had a gun, you would have killed him. You could not take it any longer, the pressure was so intense. Your property was occupied by others. Under all this, you uttered words which are in themselves a criminal offence."

Mo-John broke down and cried on the stand.

"Under the pressure and under everything that had happened to you, you threatened to kill someone who you did not see do anything, because the pressure was so intense."

Mo-John sobbed, "Yes."

"And you were going to kill the others as well because the pressure was so intense. And you were never charged with anything."

"No."

An SQ undercover policewoman, Mrs. Archibald from Ville LaSalle, appeared as a witness. She was told to come back.

Mr. Ouellette of Bell Canada was the next Crown witness. He is chief of Security in cases of long distance and computer fraud. He had a customer's record with four telephone numbers on the monthly statement, dated August 28, 1990, for telephone number 479-8715. Calls were made to (514)632-7500 to the Kahnawake Mohawk Council; (514)638-2728 to S. Lahache of Kahnawake; (514)632-8868 to W. Montour of Kahnawake; and (514)632-5498 to N. Montour of Kahnawake.

SQ Malarde, a police photographer, was next.

He went to Ronnie Bonspille's house and took pictures of right views, left views, back views, front views, insides (everything but from the top) showing the smashed ambulances and the K Car (for Kanehsatake) that were parked there. The ambulances' rear windows were broken. The right hand side of one window on the passenger side was broken. The front tires of both ambulances were flat. Windshields were broken. The insides were not damaged.

The K Car, parked in front of the ambulances had all windows and the parking lights broken. The tires were flat.

There was no damage to the main house and the small house in the back, only glass on the floor from one broken window.

Malarde took over 4,000 pictures of the Oka operation, including the end of the operation at TC. He used a 600 mm telephoto lens. (Powerful, it can take a photo of your belly

button from 600 metres, clear as day.)

### Robert Bobby Yessir! Nossir! Bonspiel

Robert Bonspiel, son of Ronnie *Robin Hood* Bonspille, was the next witness. (Spells his name differently from his father.) Bobby is 20 years old and said it did not matter what he swore on (because he wasn't going to tell the truth anyway).

Bobby told Crown Prosecutor Briere he was living in Kanehsatake 1000 m from the river. His residence, known as 'South Fork', has three houses and a pool. He lives there with his father, mother and two brothers.

Bobby's dad and mom own the ambulance service and the medical taxi. Bobby worked with his dad on the rat patrol, trying to find out who was breaking into the houses. On September 1st he was on patrol until 10:00 pm with Corey and Francis Jacobs. He went to rat patrol meetings.

He was sleeping and at 1:20 am got a call from his father telling him to get out of the house quick because "they" had gotten Francis and Corey.

Bobby said, "I ran out in my shorts and went behind the driveway towards the river in the bush. I wasn't sure what was going on (but he took off!). I took a position to make sure I could see and no one could see me. (good tactic!)"

"A few minutes later a pickup pulled up with 3 to 4 people in it. They came into the driveway area. I did not know them, except one. It was Ron Cross! There was a spotlight to the right of the driveway, next to a large birch tree. Cross was wearing camo pants and a black T-shirt. (He couldn't recall the exact message on Cross's T-shirt ... 'Prisoners of Democracy' or something like that.) He had a beard and moustache, and carried an AK47. He used it to break the vehicle windows with the butt." Bobby ran to the front of the

house.

"The others stood around the vehicles. I watched a while. Someone, I don't know who, said 'Kill him.' He proceeded to smash the windows of the ambulances with the butt of the rifle. He knelt down towards the tires and the ambulance went down (like a poo-poo cushion). The whole thing lasted five minutes."

Julio asked, "Did you lose sight of Cross?"

Bobby said he saw two vehicles and one Voyageur Mini Van parked there. "The men left by getting into the pickup truck and pulling out." He did not remember if anything else was said.

"I went to the ambulance HQ at the rear of the house, called the police to find out what was going on. Twenty minutes later Willie Nelson drove me to his house, where I got some shoes and clothes and went to the Food Bank. I saw James Smitty Nelson and Leroy Gabriel and a few others there, also Francis and Corey Jacobs whose faces were torn up. Corey was in shock, did not answer and stared blankly. Francis's eye was swollen almost shut. He was a mess!

"I asked Nelson to take me home. I was followed by other cars." (Paul Garrow and Paul Mainville).

Bobby couldn't call for his ma because she was hiding out at the Dorval Hilton. As he was leaving the territory, he met his father, who was outside the SQ checkpoint under their protection.

The barricades had been lifted and TC was closed in. The Canadian Army was everywhere. Throughout his testimony he was blinking his eye, especially when he had to answer truthfully.

Bobby had been using a rented vehicle for two to three weeks, to give medical assistance, and to take goods out of the territory to the SQ in St. Eustache.



Julio asked, "You received a call during your sleep, and then you left immediately. You got in position at the back of the house. How long is your driveway?"

"225 feet, (bragging) it fits four car lengths."

"You were in a prone position on the pavement behind the tractor. There was one light in the area. Two lights on the tree, one shining on the driveway. The truck pulls up behind the ambulance, on top of the driveway and you have a clear view of the truck and one person, Mr. Cross. Three people got out of the truck. The only person you could identify was Ron Cross because you remained in one place. What exactly did you see him do?"

"He took his AK47 and smashed the side windows of the ambulance. He had something in his hand to stab the tires. I saw the ambulances sink a couple of inches. Cross was wearing camo. I could see him and he could not see me, because I was in a darkened position and they were in a lighted position. He had an AK47. I have an AK47 myself. (Is it registered and where was it on July 11th 1990 during the shoot out at the Pines?) It is somewhat distinctive in its styling. The M16 is longer and thinner."

"You called the SQ. Went to the barricades. Did you see a policeman to make a statement to?"

"Yes. I speak French so it was written for me. I made it to one of the officers. I did not read it and it was not read back to me (a familiar refrain at this trial). I signed it. The inspector did not speak sufficient English. He told me I would have to go to court."

The lawyers for the warriors read out sections from the statement Bobby had given to the SQ.

The statement read, "I went to the woods in the back. I laid on the ground. I was very afraid. I heard the noise of shattering windows."

Bobby did not remember saying that.

The statement read, "I am going in the woods. I saw that both ambulances and blue van had been damaged by the warriors."

Julio asked, "You saw ambulances were damaged?"

Bobby said, "I saw what they had been damaging. To what extent I don't know."

The statement read, "They all had their faces masked, but I knew them and I recognized them in their way of walking and behaviour and I could swear to it." (Now he says one man did not have his mask on. Was his mind fresher right after the incident?)

Bobby said, "I do not remember saying that."

Owen asked Bobby, "Describe the patrols. I presume you knew everything that was going on."

"I was at some meetings. They were informal."

"Did you take some goods from the houses?"

"I took some from the houses and was told to go alone in mid-August to the SQ in St. Eustache with the loaded truck. I saw some of the goods in the Food Bank." Bobby said nothing was being stored in his father's place. (Was it being fenced right away?)

Bobby left the territory after the September 1st incident. He joined the US Army but was soon discharged due to his inability to adapt to Uncle Sam's regime. Because of the crisis at Oka he had a grudge against soldiers and was told to take his pension and leave. (Good scam!)

Bobby came back to Kanehsatake after the Army occupation was over.

### Angus Garble Nelson

Angus Nelson of Kanehsatake was the next witness for the Crown. Angus spoke in heavily accented English. He

answered almost every question about three times before he was understood, with the help of the Judge. Nelson told us he was "speaking deeply today!"

Briere asked Angus, "You stayed there through the summer crisis of 1990?"

Nelson said he worked for the band council and is presently unemployed. He lives half a mile from Mo-John.

Nelson, after much prodding, added, "I was just driving on Pine road with Morris Binette, my friend, about 2:00 am ... Ron Cross, Gord Lazore and two other guys I don't know came along. We went to Glen Cross's house where we met some other people ... no purpose for the meeting."

Briere asked, "Who was talking?"

"Everybody."

"Did you speak to Ron Cross?"

"Not much."

"What did you talk about?"

"His bike."

"Why?"

"He saw it on TV. They threw it off the truck."

"Pardon. I find it hard to understand. What were Gordon Lazore and Ron Cross talking about?"

"About the bike."

"What about the bike?"

"Ron wanted to find out what happened to his bike."

"What did Ron Cross said?"

"He wanted to know what happened to his bike."

"How did Ron Cross express that?"

"He said he wanted to know. We'll ask Francis."

"Why?"

"Because he was there when they took the bike."

(Briere's face was turning red), "Do you know why the name of Francis Jacobs came up?"

"He was involved."

"How did Ron Cross react? How did this conversation carried on?"

"Morris Binette said 'let's go find Francis and talk to him.'"

"Do you know if Francis Jacobs was involved in activities in patrols?"

"Eh! Heh!"

"What was that?"

Judge Greenberg interjected, "That means 'yes'."

Nelson said, "Francis Jacobs was patrolling. He was watching the houses."

Briere asked, "When you met Ron Cross at Glen's place, were you and Morris there?"

"Hm-hmm!"

Judge Greenberg asked, "Does that mean 'yes'?"

Nelson answered, "Hm-hmm! I saw the guys and we stopped."

At this point the jury was cracking up, including the judge, but Briere was going crazy. Briere, getting short with Angus, asked, "How long was the conversation?"

"Not long."

"What happened afterwards?"

"We decided to go look for Francis."

"Who decided?"

"Morris said, 'Let's go see Francis.'"

"Did everyone left the place?"

"Yes."

"How did you left the place?"

"In my truck."

"Where was your truck?"

"Outside."

It was the only truck there. It was a black pickup with an

open box. Four guys jumped in. Morris and Nelson were in the cab. They were dressed in jeans and T-shirts. They looked all over for Francis, on Center Road, #47, Min Road, everywhere, for 15 minutes.

"We were going to see Ronnie Bonspille's place first, near Center Road."

They parked at the bottom of the main road. Ron Cross was in an Army suit. He wasn't carrying anything. Gord wasn't carrying anything, wearing an Army suit too.

Briere asked, "What about the other two?"

Nelson said, "Same." One of them had a gun .. one of those automatic rifles. As they drove on 344 toward St. Germain, they spotted Francis Jacobs. He was parked on the side of the road. He did not know the make of the car or the colour because it was dark.

Angus did not know at first if Francis Jacobs was alone in his car. He was parked near Ronnie side by side. Ronnie was alone in a station wagon that was used for the mobile medical taxi.

Briere asked, "Do you know if he was in any business?"

Nelson answered, "Besides looting? He was breaking into houses."

When Nelson and the boys arrived at the scene, the boys got out and he got out of the truck. He stood there for a while. Morris stood by the passenger side.

"How long did you stood there?"

"Not long. About a minute."

Morris went around Francis's truck. Ron Cross and Francis Jacobs got into an argument that Nelson could not hear very well. Gordon Lazore went around the passenger side of Jacobs's car. That was the first time he saw Corey sitting in the back seat cowering and crying.

The other two guys were behind the car. They were

masked in net with holes over their heads. Nelson could not see what they did as it was dark.

Gordon Lazore standing at Corey Jacobs's side of the car was holding nothing.

Ron Cross and Francis Jacobs got into a fight. They were arguing.

"I did not hear what they were saying. I was looking the other way at the other guys. Francis was in the car and Ron was outside. Ron punched Francis with his fist in the face. The door was open. Ron or Francis opened it."

"How many hits did you see?"

"About three. Two punches and one later."

"How did Francis react to this?"

"He was begging for his life. He was crying. Then Ron walked away."

"What about Corey and Gordon on the other side of the car?"

"Corey had a baseball bat in the car. Morris took it away from him. Gord tried to open the door and talk to the kid. Gord kicked Corey on his butt! Corey was crying like a baby."

"What did the other two do with the bat?"

"Smashed the car headlight and windows."

"What about Ronnie Bonspille?"

"He took off right away. Went up to St. Germain to the road block."

Briere asked Nelson to describe the baseball bat. Nelson gestured with his hands so far apart, which was noted in the records. He said he missed some of the other fight. He saw the rifle in the back of his truck only when Ron took it out and fired one shot in the air, and that was it!

"That's it? Where were Ron and Gord at this point?"

"They were standing on the road. One of them said,

'We're going', and we all jumped into the truck and left."

"Where did you go?"

Nelson said they went to Ronnie Bonspille's as they were looking for him too.

Briere asked, "How did you react?"

Nelson thinking for a while asked, "How do you want me to react?"

Briere fumed and Nelson quickly said he did not react. The guys asked him and he drove them there. They got to Ronnie Bonspille's place, pulled over and got out. Nelson stayed in the truck, in the driver's seat.

"What did you see?"

"Nothing. It was dark."

Nelson heard the smashing of windows and did not know if it was the house or the cars. He did not see anyone do it. It lasted about five minutes.

And that was today's deeply spoken testimony by Angus *Garble* Nelson.

## Tuesday, November 5, 1991 Short But Not So Sweet

MNNS - The trial continued with the Crown testimony of an undercover policewoman and Angus *Garble* Nelson.

The Crown has once again withheld information from the defence, a common practice as they are more desperate to win than to see justice. Tomorrow Owen Young, lawyer for the defendants, will argue a motion for a "permanent stay of proceedings" (to stop the trial) because of the Crown's constant hiding of evidence. (Are they just messy, or are they smart enough to mess-up deliberately?)

In his argument for a mistrial or permanent stay, Owen will raise questions of non-disclosure (hiding) of evidence. "Had we known about Angus Nelson's previous testimony, (with all the 'hrmphs' and 'ahs' in it), we would have cross-examined our previous witness, Francis Jacobs, differently."

Ronnie Bonspille has backed out of appearing as a witness for the Crown. (Are we surprised, or what!) The word is out all over Kanehsatake that he was charged with assaulting a patient in his ambulance, and now no one will use his ambulance, even if they're dying. (He's an Indian, so maybe he's not a good liar too!)

Angus Nelson of Kanehsatake, the reluctant Crown witness, has been charged on counts similar to the three defendants, but was acquitted because they couldn't figure out what he was saying.

Crown Prosecutor Briere, whose face goes from pale white to beet red, wearing his tattered olive green pants, and his brownish dog-eaten scuffed penny loafers (without the pennies), continued asking the same questions. (Somebody



should give him some camo pants for Christmas. He'd probably be honoured!)

Briere asked, "Since you met these people, Cross-Lazore-Lazore and two others, at Glen Cross's place, were you under any influence of whatever?" (What?!)

Nelson thought a bit and then said, "No." (Did Briere really expect him to say yes?)

Nelson said that Morris Binette took the baseball bat from Corey Jacobs at the Friday night fight. He didn't think that Cross used the rifle at Ronnie Bonspille's. He and Morris Binette stayed in his truck at all times and they waited there for five minutes.

Briere asked, "Why were you waiting?" (Good question.)

Nelson answered, "For them to get back in. I did not want to leave them there. They had no car. It was the only way to get back. (Makes sense to me.) I parked in the driveway." He had no reaction to the glass breaking at Bonspille's. "I didn't see nothin'!"

"Why did you leave Francis and Corey Jacobs?"

Nelson said, after looking at the photos of Francis and Corey Jacobs's minor scrapes, "They weren't that bad. The guys went back to Glen Cross's place. I drove Morris back home, not far from Ronnie Bonspille's place. Then I went home."

"Did you ask any questions about the Jacobs?"

"Why should I? No reason to!"

Briere showed Nelson the photos of the damaged ambulance.

"I did not see the ambulance damaged that night. It was dark in front. There was a light at the side. No light was shining."

Briere reached into his big bag of dirty tricks, and said (what he thought was a brilliant move), "I want to make an

application under Section 9(2) of the Canada Evidence Act to cross-examine Nelson, because there are inconsistencies in his testimony with the transcript of his previous evidence. I want to have Angus Nelson declared a hostile witness." (because he was telling the truth and couldn't be bullied by the Crown and the SQ)

Owen jumped up, "There will be a motion for a mistrial. We were not provided with the transcript in question. Also, Briere assured us in the open court of Judge Tannenbaum, that not one photo was taken by the SQ on the Oka Crisis. Then yesterday SQ photographer Malarde said that he alone took over 4,000 photos which will be used in this and the trial of the 41 other accused." (Another example of white man – Briere–spoke–with–forked–tongue again!)

Briere, instead of being smart and apologizing for not having time to provide the evidence, said that it was none of his concern (even though the Judge told him last week to provide everything to Owen and Julio).

(Being white must be hard, because you're always having to prove how smart and right you are! And they don't know how to deal with people who are opposite to them, who don't give a damn about being better than somebody else.)

Greenberg just got the transcript himself, but no copy was available for Owen and Julio. Briere also said he had a mountain of papers (lies) which he thought he had given to Owen and Julio.

(The white man needs papers to write down his lies, which then turns them into truths, just 'cause they're written down. We Indians should start writing down all kinds of papers, spreading them around and pretty soon they'll become facts too!)

There was also a related transcript of Shaney Komulainen, that nice tall blonde journalist who was in the Treatment

Center with the warriors and came out with us on September 26th. Her trial is scheduled for November 11th. This paper was also kept from Owen and Julio.

Crown Briere panicked over looking bad in front of the Judge, and made flimsy excuses as to why he did not make full disclosures of evidence. (He should just admit the truth and say he was wrong. But white people are not like that. They have to argue they're right, even if they're wrong.)

Judge Greenberg decided to allow Briere to ask Nelson who brought up the subject of Ron Cross's bike that night, and where Nelson was when the guys went to Ronnie Bonspille's.

Angus Nelson was called to come back and testify, but couldn't be found because he had gone home to Kanehsatake. He has no phone, and now Briere has to go out to the res' to find him so we can continue. The trial had to be adjourned for the day.

Briere, and the judicial system, just do not want to understand Indians.

Angus Nelson had the truck. These guys were just riding around (what else, besides the obvious, can you do during a crisis?).

The Indian culture is completely misunderstood. Briere thinks the Indians have a leader, a guiding mind, who tells everybody else what to do and the rest obediently follow. Not in Indian country, you don't. This was really evident during the Oka crisis. Nelson went along with what everybody else was doing of his own free will. That's all! Don't they know anything about Indians? Is that why Briere is going crazy?

In the testimony, there may be inconsistencies of a general nature, but not on substance. The witnesses against the three (*Gerry Butcher of the Truth Etienne, George the Grand Wizard Martin and Francis Cry Baby Jacobs*) tried hard to

think like white people and tell the story that Crown Briere wanted. He was trying to pressure them to go against their culture and think as individuals who are out for themselves. But they got all confused. They had an identity crisis and a memory seizure right on the stand. They are Indians, who all act together, and the judicial system just doesn't understand the Indian mentality and culture.

To the courts, the biggest crime seems to be those broken tables, chairs, windows and missing stereos. No one remembers how close those people came to being wiped off the face of the earth!

### Lasagna's Run-In With the MUC Police

MUC (Montreal Urban Community) Policewoman Brenda Archibald, whom Julio called "gorgeous", testified about an April 13, 1990 incident. (way before the Oka Crisis)

She met Ron Cross in front of 69 St. James Street in Notre Dame de Grace (NDG), Montreal, while on patrol. She saw him running outside, chasing a moving vehicle, screaming at the top of his lungs, at 2:00 am in the morning. Someone, in the vehicle, drove off and left him behind. Emotional Lasagna must have been mad. He was with his brother Terry.

She said, "I warned him to go home and stop screaming."

Lasagna had said 'alright', and continued running after the car screaming even louder.

"I placed him under arrest for disturbing the peace. I put him in handcuffs, and he broke one. He started to resist. With my partner Jeffrey Stern's help, he was arrested (for putting loud sounds in the free air). (Why didn't they just drive him home?)

"We called for help to put him in the patrol car. He was in an advanced state of drunkenness. (and fury) It took five or

six policemen and two doormen to subdue him. (She experienced the strength of one of our well-trained warriors!) We transferred him to a police station at 4575 Mariet Street, NDG.

"In order to get him out of the car, we had to get three more policemen. He was screaming and struggling. (Ron never gives in). We did not take off his handcuff. (They must have been terrified to do so!) He was on the ground, still struggling and kicking. (He still had a lot of life in him). While four men held him down, I was finally able to search his pockets and empty the contents. He was placed in a cell and identified."

Our fair lady of the law had notes, "His papers showed that he was Ron Cross, born 9 November 1957, 380 State Street, Brooklyn, N.Y., with brown eyes, brown hair, 75 kilos (of what?)."

Lasagna was still agitated and sent to Bonsecours Jail. His brother, Terry, was also arrested the same night but was not questioned.

Lasagna had his pockets picked by this policewoman. She could not tell where the wallet was located while he was being held down by four policemen. Question: Did she really want his wallet?

Once again, one of our young men demonstrated the fighting spirit that was building up toward the big fight to come a few months later in Oka.

In the meantime, Roger Lazore, Ron Cross and Gordon Lazore (who sit in that order in the prisoner's dock) sit there every day, without exception, stone-faced, listening to every word that's uttered in the courtroom, except when they fall asleep (with their eyes open).

## Wednesday, November 6, 1991 Lawyer Brutality In St. Jerome Court

MNNS - The trial continued today without the jury. Things took a violent turn when Crown Prosecutor *Tricky Dick* Briere was caught with his pukey green pants down. He flew off the handle and tried to provoke a fight with Owen Young, lawyer for the defendants. This was witnessed by two stalwart reporters from MNNS and CBC. The three warrior defendants and two warrior observers stood by watching all the commotion.

Owen Young calmly proclaimed that he is asking for a permanent stay (throw out the case), or a mistrial (start all over and do eight months of work again), or an order that this is all the evidence there is, because of the Crown's chicanery over the withholding of evidence.

Owen said that the address the policewoman said she got from Ron Cross's pocket on April 13, 1990 is merely hearsay and not admissible as evidence. It was extorted out of him (to say the least) by six policemen.

What about his right to a lawyer? Briere wants to ruin Lasagna's character before the jury. (Maybe Briere is jealous of Lasagna, or maybe he heard a rumour they were thinking of appointing Lasagna to that big United Nations job that Brian Mulroney wants.)

380 State Street could be a union hall or mental institution in Brooklyn which iron workers and other people might use as their address. Judge Greenberg has to decide whether to admit this as evidence.

Owen asked for a permanent stay based on the Crown's failure to provide full disclosure of evidence, which is a violation of the Charter of Rights. The Crown must give full

disclosure. The Judge had said, "The dark days of ambush and surprise are over" (except for Tricky Dick).

Briere had been holding back all kinds of evidence - the witness list, which Briere provided only after the jury selection; transcripts of witnesses given elsewhere, such as Angus Nelson's in October 1990; statements of complainants, such as Corey Jacobs's.

Then there were expert witnesses such as the SQ photographer, who took over 4,000 pictures of the Oka Crisis; and the anal retentive ballistics expert's report on the finding of the AK47 bullet, which forced the Judge to call Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne back to the witness stand.

Don't forget Evelyn *Maid Marion* Diabo's lost declaration which was never found.

Suddenly photos of Gerry Etienne's and Francis Jacobs's injuries were produced during their testimony. And more of Jacobs's declarations turned up. (Tricky Dick Briere is giving the evidence out in dribs and drabs, so the defence won't have their case ready.)

What a system! It's full of loopholes that the practitioners know how to use. They were pulling out paper after paper. The whole system is rotten and the Crown can find all kinds of paper which will help him act rotten in the interests of the state!

There are thousands of photos by the Army, SQ and RCMP. Tricky Dick Briere said there are truckloads. But in Judge Tannenbaum's court Briere had said that not one SQ shutter camera clicked. (Do you believe that? Maybe they don't have anything in the pictures against the defendants!) Oka-Gate is complete with wire tap transcripts that the Crown is hiding.

Owen and Julio have Dennis Nicholas's transcript, but not Angus Nelson's. Then we hear the Crown is bringing an

application before the Canada Evidence Act to declare Nelson a hostile witness, another Briere disclosure by accident procedure.

Crown Briere was furious and started squeaking and squawking, crossing and uncrossing his legs. Then Briere sat down and picked his nose (for comfort) and shot the snot under the table. He was nervous and at one point took his right shoe off and scratched the jam off between his two big toes and then smelled his finger. (He could use some foot powder.) Being a dishonest lawyer isn't easy!

Crown Briere admitted that the Crown has an obligation to disclose its evidence. However, he hissed, snorted, swallowed his mucous, drank some water and said, "Regarding the Angus Nelson transcript and Jacobs's declaration, it's up to the accused to find them." (Can you see Lasagna, Noriega and 20-20 running around getting this stuff?)

Tricky Dick Briere blew the whistle on himself. He read paper after paper, citing this and that. It is his duty to find them guilty, not to bring out the truth.

Briere's voice broke, he started to cry and got control of himself. His manner was becoming more hysterical and his voice was getting higher-pitched. (Do all Quebec Separatists talk like that!)

Briere is desperate to win this case against the Mohawk. He is willing to lie and cheat.

Briere said, "There must be an air of reality (he should talk!), not 'wishful speculation' in relation to the 4000 photos. (That was a mouthful.)

"There is no such thing as a full total disclosure of all the police investigation throughout the crisis from July 11th. Pictures were taken from every direction. Government agencies were in the region even before July 11th. They are



entitled to only what is relevant to their case. Does the defence want to create an 'Oka Crisis Museum'?"

Judge Greenberg said, "I only got the Dione ballistics report on the day he appeared. Surely all expert's reports go to the official in charge of the case. No one gave me one. It should be made available to the Crown council so that they can make a full disclosure."

Briere said, "The defence is making a big deal about it. Gerry Etienne said it was an AK47 he saw. I did not make a case of that. It was only one bullet." (What's one little bullet between friends?)

The Judge said it could have a material bearing. "What if the expert said 25 of the 27 came from an AK47 and it was not given to you or the defence?"

(Do Julio and Owen have to break into Crown Briere's office to get all the evidence?)

The Judge said, "In relation to Angus Nelson, do we deal with it by bringing Jacobs back?"

Briere said, "You do what you want. Lawyer Perra, the former lawyer for the accused, was sitting in the court room when Dennis Nicholas and Angus Nelson testified. He should have passed the records to Young and Peris. If you want, I will bring him in. Poupart and Perra were given everything. Honestly, I am no liar!"

Julio was asked to go to another court room to ask Perra. Julio returned in a few minutes, "Perra was not there when Nicholas and Nelson testified."

Briere said, "He was there in part!"

Julio said, "Perra was not in court at all. An Indian he does not remember told him about it."

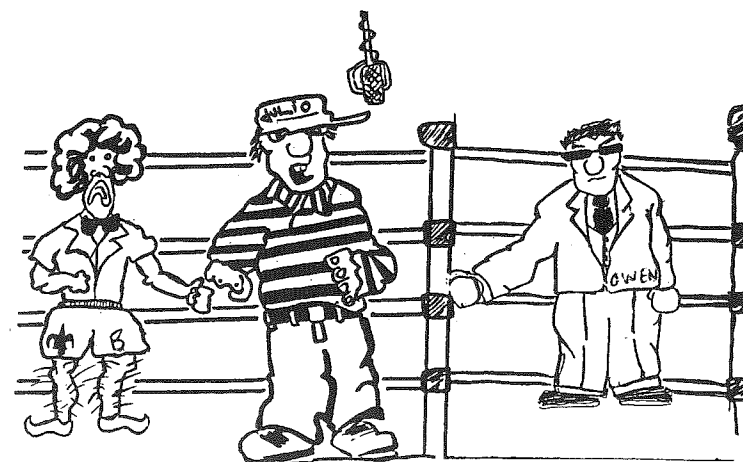
Briere screeched, "This is horrible!"

Perra came into the court room, and the Judge left so the lawyers could talk like gentlemen.

Briere yelled that Perra does not know one Indian from another. Trying to provoke a fist fight, Briere jumped at Owen and started yelling at the top of his lungs, "You are dishonest. You are a liar! I want nothing to do with liars!"

Owen tried to calm him down: "Sit down and open your ears."

Briere yelled: "Shut up! Shut your mouth! You're twisting Perra's words. I won't open my ears unless you close your mouth."



And in this corner from the Greatest Justice System in the World ...

The Judge came back in and lawyer Perra testified.

Perra said, "I heard of somebody relevant to the Jacobs's beating being asked to testify voluntarily. I only heard about it. I asked SQ Hebert why a relevant witness to our case is not testifying. I was not present in any proceeding or in a court when Angus Nelson and Dennis Nicholas gave testimony."

Julio asked Perra, "Do you know Angus? He talks as if he has a mouth full of marbles."

"No I definitely never heard Angus Nelson."

"How many declarations do you have of Jacobs?"

"Five."

"Did you have pictures of the break-ins and statements to identify the pictures."

"I don't think so. I asked for pictures though."

The Judge put his hand to his forehead as if he had a big headache.

Briere lost steam, "This is a misunderstanding. (What an understatement!) Perra made a mistake because he was not there."

Briere went on, "Let us end this twisting of facts. (ha-ha-ha! He pulled back his mucous.) Is the Crown to remember all that is said and given to the previous counsel in order to do the same work again? What if they change counsel six times in order to prevent the system from working." (He's getting gross!)

Remember Prime Minister Brian Mulroney saying on television, "This is the finest justice system in the world." Why doesn't Mulroney provide the funds for the Mohawks to get some of this justice?

If we're lucky, we might get Tricky Dick Briere as our Crown Prosecutor in our February 1992 trial!

## Thursday, November 7, 1991 Kangaroo Justice Continues

MNNS - Yesterday the trial took a "savage" turn, with near fisticuffs between Crown Puppet *Howdy Doody* Briere and Owen Young, lawyer for the defendants. Today, the circus of Judge *Clarabelle* Greenberg and his puppet *Howdy Doody* Briere (wearing his mossy green pants) continued their vengeance on our three warriors.

Law students should come to St. Jerome and watch Quebec absurdity in action.

### Judge's Decision

After hearing all the arguments yesterday, Judge Greenberg should have thrown the case out. But instead Judge Greenberg protected his little clown, "Howdy Doody, you do whatever you want, I'll cover for you!"

Justice is out of reach for Mohawks in the Quebec or any other white man's court. The Mohawk Nation will have to bring the issues before the international arena. Indian Nations have no choice but to appeal to the good people of Canada and other nations outside of Canada for help.

What we see in St. Jerome is a system that burdens us. It processes us through their foreign institutions in a hostile and uncomfortably distant place, for the purpose of fatiguing us into compliance to their measures.

The government used its military might against the Mohawk people in the summer of 1990 in Oka, and now the court is justifying this offence and the continuation of colonialism. They have used the Army to impose their will on us.

Yesterday's well founded petition by the defence for a stay or retrial was quickly set aside. Today Judge *Clarabelle*

Greenberg explained how the Charter of Rights justifies the violation of fundamental rights (in this case the right to a fair and public hearing).

Greenberg said, "Sure, the accused is entitled to know the content of the evidence against him." Then he gives a rundown of how great the justice system is, and then rips it up and throws the rags at us.

An early witness said that the accused had an AK47 in the August 1st incident in Grand Klan Chief George Martin's home in Kanehsatake. We now know of the existence of a report by the ballistics expert dated December 4, 1990, but it was not until he testified did the defence learn that the bullet in the Lemay home was probably from an AK47. Obviously if the defence had been furnished with the report, its cross-examination would have been different.

Greenberg said, "However, the Crown did not have it. Was not aware of it. Had not read it and waved it in the air and did not notice the finding regarding the bullet. So I am filing copies of the report (to cover up for Crown Briere) and will allow Gerry Etienne to be recalled to the witness stand."

Greenberg went onto the Angus Nelson prior testimony. "Mr. Nelson drove a truck and transported his friend Morris Binette, two of the accused and two other men in the alleged beating of Francis and Corey Jacobs, and damaged the home and vehicles of Ronnie Bonspille."

Here Howdy Doody Briere had messed up in his questioning of Nelson, got himself confused, and, to save Briere's neck, Judge Clarabelle Greenberg let him declare Nelson a hostile witness under Section 9(2) of the Canada Evidence Act.

Greenberg said, "The defence attorneys said this was the first time they had heard of Nelson's previous testimony. On Monday Crown Briere said it wasn't his job to do the

defence's homework for them. Up to February 1991 the three accused were represented by different counsel.

"After looking at the jurisprudence (previous cases, rather than using his head), I conclude that the defence counsel has had adequate time to prepare questioning. The previous crown witnesses, Francis Jacobs and Robert Bonspiel will be recalled to the stand, if necessary. As for the photos taken by SQ photographer Malarde, I will decide whether disclosure of photos is necessary." (It's his yard and they're his toys).

So Judge Clarabelle Greenberg's order of October 31, 1991 for the Crown to give all evidence to the defence means nothing! Howdy Doody Briere flagrantly violates the Judge's orders by refusing to provide evidence, and withholding documents, files and information.

Even though Howdy Doody Briere is messing up, the Judge thinks that the three accused will still get a fair trial. There is improper collusion between the Judge and the Crown Prosecutor.

In the case of the Policewoman, Miss Archibald, and her identification of Ron Cross in the April 13, 1990 incident:

While she was patrolling she saw Ron Cross running after a car in the street and shouting. She proceeded to arrest Mr. Cross, who resisted her, and it took eight people to subdue him. When he was arrested, he could not show his ID, and Miss Archibald found some documents, which, she said, showed his address as being 380 State Street, Brooklyn.

Howdy Doody Briere cooked this one up to make a link between Ron Cross and this address, and to ruin Lasagna's good character. But it was an amateur job and Greenberg had to throw it out, because it was "hearsay" evidence, in this case "readtell" evidence. (Better luck next time).

Then Howdy Doody Briere tried to hook up with another mockery, the Shanny Komolainen trial that is taking place on November 11th. She is the tall blond journalist who remained in the Treatment Centre with the warriors and came out with them on September 26, 1990.

Howdy Doody Briere wants to adjourn the Cross-Lazore-Lazore trial so he can take in her trial. The crown's case is so weak, that Howdy Doody Briere wants to be an "accidental tourist", tripping into another courtroom with his spyglass to find evidence to use in his case.

Owen said, "The Crown obviously doesn't know what its case is. There is still no justification for non-disclosure."

Owen Young and Julio Peris, lawyers for the defendants, want to know what the 40 Canadian Army witnesses are going to say, so Howdy Doody Briere has to provide this. Well, that's not too hard. They will all say they had orders to do it! They will start testifying on Monday, November 18th.

To help Owen and Julio prepare for questioning the Canadian Army, anybody who has any photos or information on the Army's presence on Kahnawake or Kanehsatake territory as to their behaviour (such as mooning us), should bring them into the Mohawk Nation Office. There are also Human Rights violations which should be brought in for use in the court, as well as forwarded to Amnesty International.

#### Angus Garble Nelson, Encore

Howdy Doody Briere, picking his teeth and shining up his forked tongue, put Angus Nelson back on the stand. Howdy Doody Briere flashed the transcript in front of Angus's face and asked him if he recognized it.

Howdy Doody Briere, showing no respect for Indians, asked Nelson, "Can you read? Look at this. Can you

understand this?"

The Crown did not help Angus refresh his memory like he did the other Crown witnesses, who were furnished with their declarations and transcripts and coached.

Howdy Doody Briere asked him why he had not mentioned Morris Binette (as riding around with him and the guys on the night of August 31st, 1990) in the previous testimony.

Nelson replied, "No need to."

Owen then questioned Angus. "You gave evidence a long time ago. You are a man of few words. If you don't get asked a question, you don't answer it?"

"Yep!"

Owen pointed out Angus's references to the warriors as "the men". "Six Mohawk men were meeting at the house on Pine Road (in Kanehsatake) to talk about a bunch of things. You are in the middle of the Oka crisis and so you talk about a lot of things. You are watching the news on TV. You see the motorcycle (of Ron Cross). The Mo-Johns were throwing it out of the truck."

"They were throwing gas over it and was going to burn it."

Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs's name was mentioned on TV, and they assumed that he knew about this incident. The six men got in Nelson's truck to find Francis Jacobs, who was parked on the side of the road with Ronnie Bonspille parked beside him.

Ronnie took off in his car. There was a gun in the back of the truck. Ron Cross picked it up and fired one shot in the air.

Nelson did not hear the argument between Ron Cross and Francis Jacobs. The fight started. Francis Jacobs just sat there. He gets hit twice by Ron, twice again, and then once again. Then Ron walks away. Francis starts crying, "Please,



Ronnie."

Owen asked, "You do not think much of the way Francis acted. Why?"

"He didn't defend himself. He wasn't being a man. When he was crying, and then gets hit again, Ron walks away."

"Did you have any concern that Francis was actually in trouble or in danger?"

"Nope."

"Did anything lead you to believe that Francis Jacobs was involved in the looting and the break-ins?"

"Some people seen him do it."

"What about Ronnie Bonspille?"

"Same thing."

Then Briere threw in another shot at Nelson, "Who knows about the break-ins? Name them. And what 'community' are you talking about?"

Nelson named Morris Binette and Harvey Nicholas, as a part of the Kanehsatake community, who knew about the break-ins and other people he could not mention.

The Judge said that Briere could not contradict his own witness.

### Jean Seedy Hebert

Officer Jean *Seedy* Hebert of the St. Eustache SQ testified. Hunched over in clothes that looked like he'd slept in, Hebert said he knew Dennis Nicholas for 40 years. (Isn't Dennis 38 years old?)

Seedy Hebert hasn't been able to find Dennis. On October 27th he and Briere met Dennis for 45 minutes in the SQ station in St. Eustache. They served him with a subpoena, dated September 27th, for Dennis to appear in court on October 2nd!

They had talked about what Dennis would testify. Seedy

Hebert told him, "We will call when we need you."

Then shiftier Briere said he could not provide any evidence to the defence on what Dennis is going to say.

Seedy Hebert described his many attempts since then to find Dennis in Kanehsatake, that Dennis was driving a school bus, and how he even went there at 6:00 am to catch him, but slippery Dennis was gone!

"He had moved during the night!"

Finally Dennis phoned the probation officer in St. Jerome and told him he had moved to Kahnawake (where his new wife lives), and to reach him through lawyer Corriveau at 418/692-1914.

Clairvoyant Seedy Hebert, reading Dennis's mind, said, "I do not think he will appear."

So the Judge said that another subpoena should be issued for Dennis to appear on November 18.

Two Mohawk spectators were keeping warm by wrapping their knees with the International Warrior Unity flag. Judge Greenberg said that he does not allow any other nation's flag, such as the United States (or the Mohawk Nation. Gee! Thanks, Judge!), except Quebec and Canada flags, displayed in his court.

"I am neutral (whatta laugh!) and will not permit my court room to be the subject of a political statement. This is a court of law(lessness)."

**Friday, November 8, 1991**  
**Commentary: Polluted Waters Of Justice**

MNNS - Canada and Quebec say the best way to neutralize individuals is to show they were violating federal, provincial or local laws. The state will then make up and hide evidence in order to keep Indian people tied up in the courts or in prison. The state uses its legal system to dispose of people(s) who question it, and at the same time legalizes its own lawbreaking. The state also coaches its witnesses to lie.

But in dealing with Indian people who act as a group, the legal system has to go even further to convict them. It is evident in this trial that Crown Prosecutor Briere had to manufacture evidence in order to obtain "legal" convictions of our political warriors. The Crown has shown a great deal of zeal in trying to convict the accused through a non-existent case, using Indian witnesses who have lied and contradicted themselves and each other.

Gordon Lazore, for the first time, showed up a few minutes late today. Judge Greenberg had already drawn up a warrant for his arrest when Gordon walked into the court room. Truthful Gordon said, "I didn't wake up in time."

Judge Greenberg ordered Gordon to buy an alarm clock (at his brother's store in Outremont), to stop watching the 11:00 news and to go to bed earlier.

Everybody else in that court is being paid with taxpayer's money to sit in court, except the defendants, their counsel and their supporters. Gordon has been in court almost everyday for the last eight months without pay. Can Judge Greenberg go so far as to dictate an order that can make a man buy something (without money) and go to bed earlier? Mohawks are forced to dig deeper into their non-existent resources.

Going to court is unnatural for Gordon, and for any

Indian. So his reliance on nature to wake him up for something unnatural is a cultural conflict.

Are Indians entitled to the constitutional protection in the white man's courts as other people under the same laws? Not in Judge Greenberg's court room.

Crown witnesses Gerry *Butcher Of the Truth* Etienne and Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs bombed out! Their signed declarations contradicted their testimony on the witness stand.

So now the Crown is going to bring in secret witnesses to fill virtually every hole in its 'case' against Cross-Lazore-Lazore.

Even the Judge said, "Francis Jacobs's credibility has been seriously shaken." Now he is going to give protection to "secret Indian witnesses" and their information first, but will not protect the right of Cross-Lazore-Lazore to a fair trial.

The Crown says that he does not have to reveal the names of his two secret Indian witnesses. Judge Greenberg, in effect, when he decided yesterday to rule against our defence lawyers' motion to have all the evidence and the secret witnesses' names revealed, told us, "Let me assure you that the three political warriors will be railroaded." (or words to that effect)

The ballistics report said that one AK47 bullet was found in the Lemay house in Kanehsatake that was trashed during the Crisis. The Crown has tried to disregard this fact because witnesses have said that Ron Cross had an M16.

The Crown is trying to tighten its circumstantial net around Cross by calling a policewoman who had arrested Cross sometime before the Crisis for disturbing the peace, and getting her to say that she found some papers on him connecting him to the 380 State Street address in Brooklyn. Apparently someone made a call to this number from the Lemay house on August 9th when the trashing allegedly

occurred.

At the same time, the Crown has its agents sitting in the courtroom monitoring the proceedings so they can better coach their secret witnesses. The Crown's tactic is to convince the all-white jury that the court, police and military lawless actions against the Mohawk is a justifiable response to the government-created atmosphere of violence on the Akwesasne, Kahnawake and Kanehsatake territories.

The blatant disregard for its own laws shows how far Canada has travelled down the road of becoming a police state in the "new world (dis)order". If you think that only Indian rights are going to be abused, think again. Next to the United States, Canada has more of its citizens in jail per capita than any other country in the world. Regarding non-whites, Canada has absolutely the worst record.

How are white people going to feel when they're treated like Indians? Watch out! It's going to happen someday.

The Mohawk Nation will not have an easy life for a while. It will be a life of struggle.

Presently, Mohawk people have the duty to frame the fate of our Nation. We cannot stand idly by while our people are being railroaded in the white man's court system. If we shrink from the hardship ahead, then the bolder and more evil people will overwhelm us. Let us face the life of strife and do our best to uphold the righteousness, honesty and bravery of our people. We should not be afraid of the strife and danger we are going through, for we shall ultimately achieve again our true greatness.

And how much is this kangaroo court costing Canada? The price tag to get Lasagna-Noriega-20/20 is probably half a million dollars. And no one has yet calculated the cost in human or economic suffering of the Mohawk people themselves.

And what is the tax dollar buying? The witnesses against the accused have to lie for the Crown. None of these liars (Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne and Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs) have been charged with criminal perjury. And we don't know if they ever will be!

Judge Greenberg thinks he is funny, that he is a humanitarian, which is far from the truth. Greenberg is nasty and always pressing for time. He likes to split hairs and at the same time drags things out. He is a contrary man. Which goes to show how white people can believe their own lies about themselves. At least we Indians always keep each other in our place, and don't believe any lies about ourselves.

Judge Greenberg was excited for a few minutes about a brand new Supreme Court of Canada decision (*Stinkbomb vs. The Queen*) that came out yesterday, which he had not read yet. It was about the Crown having to give all its evidence to the defence lawyers. After reading the decision over lunch, it turns out this decision shows that Judge Greenberg was wrong yesterday.

As you can see, we can't trust the court and we now have to assume the worst. The Crown has a weak case, and is hiding evidence that hurts its case.

An elder commented, "The system is not for us. We sit there day after day while the Judge pulls out papers upon papers to support what his evil system is doing to us. They have such a 'hard face', it's ten inches thick now. Do they want us to be as ugly as they are?"

"What did we ever do wrong (to be punished as badly as we are)? It seems that every time we ask a white person this question, they don't give us an answer. They just look at us stunned. We asked a Jew this question and he said, 'I don't know. I'm not white, I am a Jew, so I can't give you an

answer.' But he's part of that system too.

"It seems everybody knows what's happening to us is wrong, but they say, 'No, it's not me whose doing it.' Why are they all admitting it's wrong, and still doing nothing about it?

"In Indian society we have a responsibility to each other, no matter how bad it is. In the white man's system, it seems that they have no responsibility for each other, because they have papers, laws, courts, police, and politicians who take care of everything for them. It seems that the white people leave their responsibility to somebody else, starting from childhood on up. They send their kids out to be raised by strangers in schools, and they want us to do the same.

"In the white man's court, somebody else decides if you are wrong. Then they throw you in jail, get you more mad, and then they make more bad people (more customers for their system and more jobs in the courts for their people).

"If you are educated, have money, know their system, you can get away with things. If you do not have money, then you get confused and become a victim of the system. Even if he's not wrong, they're going to punish him.

"Look at Donald Marshall (a Micmac of Nova Scotia) who did not murder anybody and was in jail for eleven years, until they finally let him out. He's bitter and maybe will do worse. They can't give money to pay him for taking his natural freedom and his life from him. Look at what he lost? He was a young man who probably never expected to get out of jail.

"If they have a god, how can they do this to people? The white man thinks that once they give money, then their conscience is clear. So it's only money that means anything to them. Well, now is the time for them to have a really clear conscience, and put up some money for this court case.

"In the Indian system, we do not punish. We explain

what someone did wrong, why they did wrong, and ask them why. When they talk about it, they feel better. They talk about it because they do not want anybody else to do the same thing. Then we try to make them admit that they are wrong, which could have been for a lot of reasons, and say they're sorry for it. We put them back with us, and usually they become good citizens. Usually they won't do it again when that happens to them. We are not gods to say that we can have that much power over somebody that we will punish them.

"For example, if a child does something wrong. If you talk to them, they straighten up. But if you put that child in jail, that child won't learn anything. If you explain it to them, they will learn. This is the same for grown-ups.

"The white people are making more laws so they can find a way to get more money or work out of you, or throw you in jail and make you work inside the jail for nothing. All the poor people will soon be in jail and doing free labour in prisons, just like Hitler did.

"Look at the Crown witnesses, the Indians are lying badly for the SQ against their own Indian people, and might end up being charged with criminal perjury. These men deserve to be punished by the system they are using to do harm to their own people.

"How did the white man decide that something is wrong? When they destroy land and nature, don't they think of their generations ahead? We do. Nobody knows for sure what is wrong. Our 50 chiefs sit together and talk and they know what is good for their own people at that time.

"When we arrive in St. Jerome Court every morning, we see the same scene, halls in the building full of nervous white people who are poor, who have poor clothes. They look the same as those who were throwing rocks at our people and rioting in Chateauguay during the crisis. These are the same



kind of people who voted back Mayor Ouellette of Oka and Mayor Bourcier of Chateauguay (where racist mobs who attacked the Mohawks during the 1990 Crisis came from). Do they like to be tortured? Or are they brainwashed and controlled so they don't know better?"

This trial growing out of the Oka Crisis involves serious misconduct by the Crown, Judge and witnesses. The witnesses have probably been promised immunity and other rewards for their cooperation in putting Lasagna, Noriega and 20-20 in prison. So far, testimony has been given in this case which, if believed, shows that the government induced witnesses to testify falsely. The reason is because of the Government's weak case.

This trial should be monitored by Amnesty International, who should publish an analysis of the victimization of the Mohawk people by the government. They should demand a Commission of Inquiry to look into the nature of the government's operations. It is clear that the government finds it more appropriate to put the three accused away in locked cells rather than expose its misconduct in the Mohawk affair.

Prime Minister Mulroney's urging Mohawks to submit themselves to *the greatest justice system in the world* is an embarrassment for Canada, and a 20th Century nightmare for Indians. The world should know this.

Court is adjourned for the week of November 11th. On Monday, November 18th, the Crown's "secret Indian witnesses" and the Canadian Army will start testifying against our three warriors. Let's be there.

## Wednesday, November 13, 1991 Commentary: IRS Harasses Mohawks

MNNS - The trial will continue on Monday, November 18, 1991 with the testimony of the Crown's secret Indian witnesses and 40 of Canada's finest soldiers.

If it isn't one thing, it's another! Would you believe that there's an attack from another direction against the Mohawks. This time it's from south of the border.

The Internal Revenue Services (IRS), America's Gestapo, has recently escalated a political and public campaign aimed at the Mohawk Nation. The IRS action toward the Mohawk is the longstanding practice of targeting political enemies for harassment, criminal frameups, and abuse, under the excuse of "tax collection".

In thousands of separate, coordinated cases, the IRS has made wild and frivolous claims that the Mohawk ironworkers owe taxes. The IRS is trying to convict the Mohawks on an assortment of tax evasion charges.

These new actions against the Mohawk are typical of the use of the IRS as a Gestapo against the government's political enemies, and have nothing to do with collecting taxes. In this case the enemies of the Mohawks are New York State, Ontario and Quebec, as well as U.S. and Canadian governments.

An internal IRS memorandum dated August 27, 1963 titled *Audit of Ideological Exempt Organizations* reveals how the IRS set up a political police unit. The memo detailed how the project was started in November 1961 with a test audit of 22 "extremist groups" on both sides of the center of politics, to determine whether the IRS could put them out of business.

By 1965 the political "thought police" at IRS was well in place. A December 31, 1965 assessment of the "ideological organizations" project, written by William Lehrfeld, Senior

Tax Specialist, praised the program for "purging from the rolls of exemption alleged propagandists, extremists, and other such movements whose ideals and opinions did not conform to those of America's mainstream".

From 1969 to 1973, the IRS ran a Special Service Staff (SSS) (Get it? Pretty close to Hitler's SS). The SSS compiled files on more than 2,873 organizations and 8,585 individuals who were targeted, not because of known or even suspected tax violations, but rather because of "extremist" political activities. The SSS was officially disbanded in 1973, but its functions were transferred to other units within the IRS. (They always do that!)

### Tomahawk The Taxes Movement

The Mohawk ironworkers are fighting back with an "ax the tax" movement, which has already launched an action in the courts of the United States challenging the IRS tactic. Local, national and international support is needed for this effort.

The frivolous charges against the Mohawk include fabricated claims that Mohawk ironworkers owe over \$40 million in tax money. The IRS targeting of the Mohawk ironworkers is blatantly political and a major thrust of the IRS enforcement division.

A representative of the Mohawk Nation has left today for Europe to alert the World Court in The Hague to the illegal use of taxation power against the Mohawk Nation for political persecution and neutralization.

## Monday, November 18, 1991 Platoon II

MNNS - The trial continues.

### Judy Sue Ellen Bonspille

Today, the first witness for the Crown was Judy *Sue Ellen* Bonspille. She is one of the owners of the Kanehsatake Mobile Service Regd., along with her husband, Ronnie *Dom de Luise* Bonspille, and Linda and Clarence Simon.

Kanehsatake Mobile Service owns one ambulance and borrows another one from Ambulances Joliet Inc. They also own a van. The ambulance had \$8,000 and the van \$1,000 in damages.

Once again, damages were described in great detail ... smashed windows and flattened tires.

Judy, a white woman, said, "It was devastating! All that broken glass!" (It is sickening that so much time is spent on dents and material things, rather than on human issues like land claims and the historic suffering of Indian people.)

Judy and Ronnie work for the company, which pays them a salary, although, she said, "There's no profit!!"

Owen showed her the photos. Judy said she did not see the white car that was in the photo when she first went back to Kanehsatake on September 4, 1990 to look at the damage to the vehicles.

Judy evacuated on July 12th, one day after the SQ attack on the people in the Pines. She moved into the Dorval Hilton on August 29th. (Where was she in between?)

### Private Patrick R2-D2 Cloutier

22 years old. Infantryman. 22nd Regiment. Stationed in St. Adele Quebec. Originally from Gaspe.

R2-D2 went to Oka for 'military intervention' in the summer of 1990. He arrived at the frontier on August 11th. A blue eyed and bushy-tailed Injun fighter, he was ready to battle the Indians with the *Grizzly Beagles*. The Grizzly is a six wheel drive armoured vehicle that carries 11 soldiers in the back and a driver.

He reported to Sgt. Paradise, who reported to Lt. Lessard, who reported to Major Tremblay, who reported to General Roy, who reported to General Foster, who reported to Brian Mulroney, who reported to George Bush!

Patrick stayed for less than two weeks, taking in the *Battle of Little Big Oka*. He maintained the vehicles, exercised, trained, practiced, went out on recons to the front (sounds like *desert storm*).

Civilian salivating Crown Prosecutor Briere asked, "When did you left for the front?"

R2-D2 went on September 1, 1990 to the first barricade on the road, made of cut down trees (sounds like *The Alamo*). There he met his first warriors, armed and masked. The warriors withdrew and the Army started to dismantle their barricade.

Then *F Troop* went to the golf course and onto a dirt road that led directly to the lacrosse field in the Pines. (It's starting to sound dangerous!)

They encountered more warriors, who also backed up (when the tanks, missiles, and nuclear weaponry was pointed at them).

Tremblay gave the order, "Get out of your vehicles!" They cleared a security and safety zone. They wanted to establish for their platoon a stop point to rest for the day.

There were warriors around. When the army saw the terrain was favourable, they advanced. Sgt. Paradise told R2-D2 to go on the right. He walked 200 metres and came

upon some warriors near the lacrosse box, some of whom were on the ground taking a firing position. (They were actually on the ground playing a summer version of *snow snake*.)

"Seven or eight warriors came towards me, with three or four aiming at me with AK47s." He stayed in position.

Then he encountered a warrior, wearing a small Blue Labatt baseball cap. The warrior threw his gun on the ground, came up to R2-D2, and said, "Drop your gun. Do you want to fight with me?"

The warrior gave Cloutier a few shoves and yelled, "Go back home. It's my line. You've passed the line!"

R2-D2 didn't react. Then a man slowly walked toward him from a far-off distance, until he was in front of him. It was Lasagna! Lasagna said, "Go back home."

R2-D2 said, "He came close to me and told me I was too young to die. (which is good advice) He took his magazine from his weapon, took out a bullet, showed it to me in front of my face. He knew I wear a bullet proof vest. Lasagna said he would shoot it in my feet, it would go up my leg, through my heart and out of my head."

Even though the whole regiment had surrounded the warriors, with their artillery trained on them, this scared the living Jesus out of R2-D2 and the others. He said he was nervous when he faced Lasagna because, "It's not every day one wakes up in the morning and faces Lasagna."

R2-D2 said to Lasagna, in English, "You mudder fucker."

Briere asked, "Why did you say that?"

"It just came out."

R2-D2 said that Lasagna was fashionably dressed in a camo military uniform, trimmed with webbing, a camo hat with a metal pin in the brim and feathers on the back. His face was made up in the latest camo warpaint, and his attire was

finished off with an M16 in his sling and a gun on his left hip. (Later Cloutier said he saw Lasagna other times with an AK47.)

R2-D2 said his superior told him not to reply or answer back to these people. He saw warriors aiming and he cowered taking a position on the ground, until his supervisor told him to stand up and be a man.

R2-D2 said he saw Lasagna five or six times more. One time Lasagna came to look at Private Doggone in the eyes and screamed at him about who he would kill next. Then he saw him in front of TC (the Treatment Centre where the warriors retreated when they were surrounded by over 2,000 soldiers and their artillery).

One night when there was panic in the woods, he saw Lasagna standing next to a pine tree. The warriors were having fun tying the Army's barbed wire to a four-wheel drive and pulling it, while throwing baseball bats and other things and screaming and yelling. The Army reacted by ordering the soldiers to stand up in 'Indian file' along the road with guns ready.

Lasagna later said of R2-D2, "He's just a little baby. It's true. He is too young to die. I told him they were coming on our land with all their military hardware, and it wasn't right."

The warriors must have scared those army kids. Last spring one of them, during the preliminary inquiry, started to vomit when he was trying to describe how the Indian women had thrown sacred Hadui dust on the Army. The soldier ran out of the court room leaving a trail of vomit behind.

During the summer of 1990, 185 soldiers were taken out of Oka to hospitals with diarrhoea during the Crisis after these women threw Hadui dust on them. (That sure made the Army move!)

R2-D2 said that Lasagna's weapon had two chargers

taped together. This makes it faster to shoot. "He can shoot more people more rapidly."

R2-D2's combat gear included four pouches in front, each with a charger, and a charger in his weapon.

R2-D2 pointed to Lasagna in the courtroom and Lasagna pointed back at him.

Owen Young and Julio Peris discovered that R2-D2 had testified on October 28-29, 1991 in another trial. They had to study the transcript of R2-D2's earlier testimony before cross-examining him.

### Party Animal, Harvey Nicholas of Kanehsatake

In a nearby court room another drama was taking place. Harvey Nicholas had been in charge of the media on July 11, 1990 when the SQ tried to massacre the Mohawks in the Pines. He was charged with having weapons, obstructing, resisting, rioting and so on. One SQ testified against him and he was convicted on four counts.

The Crown prosecutor was none other than Francois *Trying to Make a Name by Putting Mohawks Behind Bars* Briere. Briere blamed everything on Harvey from being the mastermind of the warriors and the whole operation, and just about everything that happened in Quebec since Confederation.

Harvey was here today for sentencing by Judge St. Germain, *the Hanging Judge*, who spoke only in French. Harvey got a public defender and this is the defence he got. He did not have any witnesses and did not testify in his own defence because the lawyer said these witnesses could be used against Lasagna (which is a bunch of bull). Harvey said, "I will just go and serve my time."

Harvey will be remembered as the guy on television who was asked on July 11th, "What if the SQ come in?" His



reply, "Oh, we'll have a party."

*Side note:* The SQ wanted to use one sentence from the SQ wiretaps as evidence, but there were seven years of wiretaps and all would have to be listened to in order to place the one sentence in context. So much for that idea.

### Eric Andre G.I. Jean Keable

29 years old. Mortar firing expert. 2nd Battalion Royal 22 Regiment, who reported to Col. Daigle.

G.I. Jean was called to Oka on August 28, 1990. When they arrived in Kanehsatake, they separated the barricade with metal wiring to stop people from trying to cross. Then they went directly into the Oka Pines (a dangerous operation) on September 1st.

"We came face to face with the warriors and tension was in the air. The warriors were nervous. We moved and took the lacrosse box." (a large scale military maneuver to take a major strategic objective)

G.I. Jean said that if they were ever to lose control of the situation they had orders to engage the warriors in direct mortar firing, using shells of 81mm calibre of a scope of 580m to 'neutralize' the adverse party (in other words, to nuke the warriors).

Briere asked, "Who did you meet in the Pines?" (Some picnickers?)

"The warriors! We used men with guns and vehicles (with machine guns always pointed directly at the warriors). Everybody was nervous, which created a lot of tension in the air (You can say that again!). We stretched out our line to prevent the warriors from gaining ground. They withdrew." (So far the warriors have done nothing.)

The soldiers moved to the right to tighten the perimeter. They surrounded the trenches, bunkers and weaponry (tents,

chain saws, tools, bows and arrows, ammunition ... a Mohawk archaeological site of the future).

The warriors were on the right screaming insults and yelling. At this point the warriors divided, going to the left of the soldiers.

R2-D2 was having a confrontation with a masked warrior. (He *knew* it was Lasagna because Lasagna always wore the same hat. Couldn't it be the same hat but on a different head?)

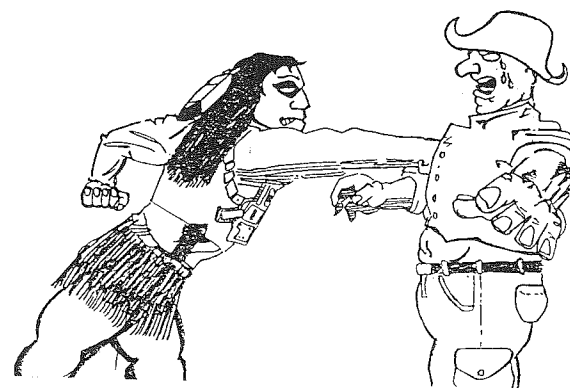
"Sometimes Lasagna would change his weapons but he always had a handgun."

There was a gathering of people. Behind him were Privates Rouleau, Shellac and Doggone.

"After September 1st I saw Lasagna on television, and live in front of us. Everybody always had their eyes on him." (and wanted his autograph)

Briere then tried to link Lasagna with what everybody else was doing. "Since they were in the Pines, they all took part, just like the military. They are all part of the same group, who took a position at the same time for a common reason. Lasagna did not act as a bystander."

The trial continues with 39 more soldiers testifying.



You mudder ...\*\*#!!!!

**Tuesday, November 19, 1991**  
**The Greatest Justice System In The World?**

MINNS - Yesterday's witness, *G.I. Jean* Keable, said that when they surrounded the Mohawks and isolated them in the Treatment Center, "We knew they were criminals." No question about it. The Army had it all planned ahead of time because they were going after those big bad Mohawks. Briere was apparently in Oka from day one planning the case against the Mohawks even before anything happened. (He had all this time to prepare and he still messes up.)

Now Briere's evidence against our three warriors is falling apart and he's looking for more evidence. Today he came up with a video and photos about the September 1st Army advance around the Treatment Center. This video had been used in an adjacent court in another trial.

If Francois *Trying to Make a Name by Putting Mohawks Behind Bars* Briere had it his way, he would adjourn the case, and go to all the other cases involving Mohawks and see if he can find any new evidence against the Mohawks.

"He's stumbling from one court to the other, desperately looking for new evidence. He's a desperado!" said a Kanehsatake supporter. "Briere shoots himself in the foot at every turn."

The whole day was spent in arguments about the same old issue, the lack of disclosure of evidence to the defence. Judge Greenberg is getting desperate too because he wants the trial to continue in an orderly fashion to reflect his good housekeeping and refereeing. Instead, there is pandemonium and confusion every step of the way. And the Judge keeps mopping up after Briere. At some point this must stop! Logic is in short supply here.

We broke off to look at the video, *From Here to Eternity*, a collage of CBC news broadcasts on the Crisis that had been aired on television.

When the Army advanced on TC on September 1st, there had been a lot of shouting, swearing and face-offs, but no pointing of weapons by the warriors.

The Army, on the other hand, pointed their guns and tanks on the warriors. The warriors were cooler than the soldiers. And the Army carried weaponry with extra clips so they could shoot faster and wouldn't run out of ammunition (just in case).

One face-off was terminated when a warrior girl showed up with pizzas.

Today a virulent supporter from Kanehsatake said, "More people should be coming to witness this debacle they call the greatest justice system in the world, and support our men."

Owen and Julio, the lawyers for the three warriors, were really fed up with the ongoing low life tactics of Crown *Hot Shot* Briere, who wants to go down in history as the man who put Lasagna behind bars (and himself in the loony bin, coo-coo's nest, nuthouse, cracker factory!)

The trial was adjourned until Friday, so Briere could gather more proof against the warriors, grasping at straws because his case is so weak.

Julio questioned soldier G.I. Jean today.

G.I. Jean kept a field journal of the events of the Oka Crisis and his observations on the performance of his men. He wrote down the incident concerning Lasagna and R2-D2. On September 29, 1990 he made a declaration to the SQ about this.

G.I. Jean testified on August 22, 1991 and then destroyed his notes. He said he usually keeps his notes. He could not remember when he destroyed them, but noticed at some point

that he no longer had them. SQ officer Lapointe and lawyer M. Gauthier had asked why he hadn't kept his notes. G. I. Jean said that no one had told him to keep them. (But he destroyed them to save the Army embarrassment. There was something in the notes that looked bad for the Army.)

G.I. Jean likes to follow orders. He said he had not seen any videos. Then said he had seen plenty of videos on the Oka crisis in the Army archives and Information Services Section of the Department of Defence. He was also shown photos to identify people. He had numerous meetings with Briere and other SQ, who sometimes went to Quebec City to see him.

G.I. Jean said that Major *Weird Al* Tremblay took all the tapes of the crisis with him and made his own films. (He loves to see himself in the movies.) He even dubbed his own voice so that he spoke better English on film. He sent the video *Face-off at Oka Corral* to a Hollywood agent, and is now being considered for a role in a remake of *Hogan's Heroes*. Tremblay still thinks the Mohawks don't like golfers.

Everything that was said on the radio, walkie-talkies, PRC 77 are maintained in the Army archives. Are these accessible to anybody? We should have a look at these.

The Army put on workshops for their 40 witnesses to prepare them for their assignment to "railroad the Mohawks". Briere, the SQ and the Army spent a lot of time cooking up this phony evidence.

It is now becoming more and more obvious that the white man's justice system is made to process victims one at a time. It breaks down when they have to deal with a whole Nation.

Said the supporter from Kanehsatake, "Did we ever make a mess! The white man's system just can't handle this whole mess!"

She continued, "If Briere has 59 counts against our three

warriors, he should do his home work and have his case ready. The more I see of this system, the more I realize that it is falling apart. Hey, we're slowly destroying the greatest justice system in the world."

Wednesday, November 20, 1991  
Commentary: Where Are They Now?

MNNS - The trial is adjourned until Friday, November 22nd so Judge Greenberg can mop up some of the mess Crown Prosecutor Francois *Redface* Briere left behind yesterday.

Crown Briere, for the Canadian and Quebec governments, has so far brought in some of the biggest liars in Indian country as witnesses against our three warriors. George *Klan* Chief Martin, Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne and Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs's credibility were all fatally shaken under cross-examination by defence lawyers, Owen Young and Julio Peris. They lied and were caught at it. What has happened since to these crown witnesses? What are they doing now?

An MNNS investigative reporter has found out.

George Martin, the former Grand KKKlan Chief of Kanehsatake, testified against the accused that they went to his house and threatened him. He has taken himself off the welfare rolls and was last seen pigging out at Pizza Hut. He has been given a new identity through the Federal Witness Protection Program. He got rid of his brown leather jacket, became a gentleman farmer, and is now living as Darryl, Darryl and Darryl.

Gerry *Goodyear* Etienne was last seen at the Pizza Hut with George. After he testified against the Mohawks about being allegedly assaulted (but got no bruises), he threw away his brown leather jacket, bought himself a new shirt from the parachute store, and was given a new identity. He is now living as John Candy.

Evelyn *Maid Marion* Diabo Martin, was last seen with George and Gerry at the Pizza Hut. When her husband evacuated Kanehsatake on August 1st, she bravely stayed

behind holding the fort. She gave her brown leather coat to the Tickle Trunk, was given a new identity, and is now living as Roseanne Arnold.

Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs, one of the chief witnesses for the Crown against the Mohawks, a suspect in the looting of the white people's homes in Kanehsatake during the 1990 Crisis, is free and able to finger more Indian people for persecution. He took Evelyn's brown leather coat and some of her other clothes and is now living as Dale Evans. (It's hard to recognize him). Because he can't read, he is taking up braille and interpreting dreams.

Angus *Garble* Nelson, who was given a hard time by the Crown because he was loyal to the warriors, and told of his disgust at Francis Jacob's "crying like a baby" and "not acting like a man" when Lasagna punched him around, is working as an extra on the *Untouchables*.

Judy *Sue Ellen* Bonspille, of South Fork, the Kanehsatake Ambulance tycoon, has joined the International Red Cross in order to serve the Mohawk Nation better. Judy is still Sue Ellen.

Ronnie *Dom de Luise* Bonspille, who was supposed to appear as a witness against the accused, but took off, who was implicated in the looting of those white peoples' houses in Kanehsatake, and brought the Army onto Mohawk Territory on September 1st, took off in his blue van. He is now living as Mother Theresa and teaches kindergarten somewhere.

Bobby *Yessir! Nosir!* Bonspiel, was thrown out of the U.S. Army, and testified against the accused. He was cowering in the bushes when his parents' ambulances were being damaged, and running goods to the SQ in St. Eustache during the whole Crisis. He finally found his niche in life. He's an "official" SQ informant.

We wish them well in their new out of body experiences.



Mohawk Warriors Three 125

**Friday, November 22, 1991**  
**Quebec Wants To Rewrite The Oka Crisis**

MNNS - Running true to form, Judge Greenberg's *Good Ship Lollipop* went aground right on the shores of Lake of Two Mountains.

A "huge" delegation of Six Nations Mohawks, Mad Bear, Will Sampson and Hulk Hogan, walked into the courtroom. They are all dark, over 6 ft. 5 in. and dressed in denims and cowboy boots.

The Judge got scared of having Indian men sitting in the court room. Ethnocentric Greenberg immediately kicked one of them out for following a Longhouse custom of sitting down first before taking his hat off. He said to the startled Indian, "And don't you come back now." Then Greenberg called in the SQ look-outs (for the Indians) at the courtroom door and reprimanded them for letting the Indian slip by them wearing a hat.

Owen Young and Julio Peris, lawyers for the defendants, brought up the question of lack of proper disclosure again. This time it was one video and 40 photos that were used in the journalist, Shaney Komoulainan, case in the next courtroom.

The comedy of errors continued. Now, once again, it finished at noon and was adjourned to next Tuesday, November 26th, while Crown Prosecutor Briere tries to organize a reenactment of the Mohawk Oka Crisis, which included 1,500 journalists, 4,400 Canadian Army soldiers and their latest artillery, 2,000 Surete du Quebec (SQ), an unknown number of white racists mobs, and 50 Mohawks and their allies. But *Popeye* Briere doesn't want to provide too much evidence because he's afraid that an *Oka Crisis Museum* might be set up.

*Captain Kangaroo* Greenberg will aid his First Mate

Popeye Briere to keep the Oka trial afloat. Popeye Briere kept conferring with a troop of SQ flatfoots, who sat behind him, and with *Mr. T* Teasdale, a fellow Crown Prosecutor, who kept throwing him a rope to pull him out of the quicksand. But it didn't work. It was the blind leading the blind.

Mr. T Teasdale called Owen and Julio niggers and a bunch of complainers because of their constant requests for disclosure of evidence.

Then *Blank* Blandhard, a lawyer for the CBC-TV, showed up and gave Briere three more videos. Briere, a Nintendo Whiz, got all excited. (To put him out of his misery, we should give him a handful of quarters and send him out to a video arcade.)

Now they decided they needed the journalists from the Komoulainan case to appear in the Cross-Lazore-Lazore trial.

But it's just about as hard to subpoena journalists as it is to subpoena Indians. They just melt into the background. They want two from Toronto, one from Hamilton and one from Ottawa, but don't have their addresses (Stewart, Gagne, Siever and McDonald).

Briere lifted up a book with a list of over a thousand journalists who were at Oka during the crisis.

Owen told the Judge, "It's in alphabetical order."

The Judge ordered Briere, "Look on the list alphabetically and find their addresses."

Then they went into an Academy Award trip, when Captain Kangaroo Greenberg asked for "the sealed envelope please", which was supposed to contain the names of the journalists who were witnesses at the Shaney Komoulainan trial.

Popeye Briere was so happy that he could now subpoena them for his star studded extravaganza next week in front of the jury. He is even bringing in Shaney herself. (This guy

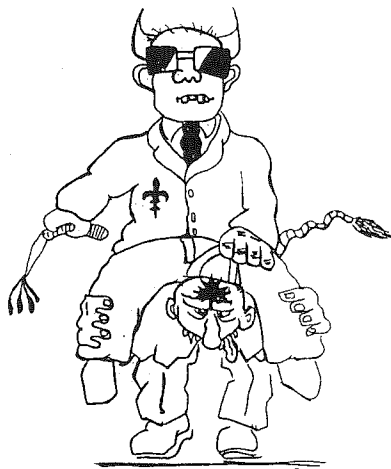
has to be star-struck!)

In the meantime, the Indians in the audience and the defendants in the prisoner's dock sit and watch the white people's tragedy on the 'Greatest Justice System on Earth, etc. etc.' Our three warriors remained cool, calm, collected and snoozy throughout this buffoonery.

We just heard that Popeye Briere and Mr. T Teasdale will be the Crown Prosecutors for the trial of the 41 others that will be starting on February 3, 1992. We have all the luck!

It's obvious Quebec wants to reenact the Mohawk Oka Crisis, but with a different ending. This time the Mohawks will lose! Do you think if we win this case it means the Mohawks went to war with Canada and Quebec and won?

We need lots of native heavies in the audience, which lifts the morale of the three warriors who have to sit there day after day. But if you're an Indian, don't chew gum and take your hat off before going into the courtroom!



Even if we separate we can still bash the Mohawks together!

## Saturday, November 23, 1991 Another Saturday Night In Ol' Kahnawake

MNNS - It was just another Saturday night in Kahnawake, the Mohawk Nation territory in Quebec. The RCMP and SQ death squads have surrounded the community for over a year, since the Mohawk Oka Crisis of 1990. Kahnawake is about a 40 minute drive from Oka.

The kids were being put to bed, the house was being tidied, the cops and robbers show was on television, and the scanner was turned up loud (standard household equipment in Kahnawake to monitor the police) ... it was just another Saturday night.

Suddenly at 10:30 a call went out to everybody in scannerland to go immediately to "2 by 4 Corner", an intersection in front of a lumber yard on the east end approach to the now infamous Mercier Bridge. This was the scene almost a year ago of a big clash between the Mohawks and combined RCMP/SQ forces who disbursed the people by firing shots at them, now referred to as *The Battle of 2 by 4*.

Within a matter of minutes a couple of hundred Mohawk men, women and children gathered around this intersection, with more in the bushes, others on their way, and who knows what else. They were ready for anything, as it was just another Saturday night in Kahnawake. "Come on, Rats, let's get this over with!" said they.

Just minutes before a car with three Mohawk women returning to the reserve was rammed and forced to pull over by the "Blue Rats", as the RCMP (who always get their man) are called by the Mohawks. (The SQ are the "White Rats".)

"It was a routine harassment check," the RCMP said.

Mounties had approached the Indian car and asked the passengers to get out. As usual a shoving match started. A

pregnant woman who was pushed and shoved hit one of the Blue Rats. He tried to arrest her (and her unborn warrior) but they got away. The Blue Rat then took off to get his friends, the riot squad, who were ever ready about a mile down the road (riot gear is standard equipment for the death squads that linger around the territory).

The Blue Rat said of being shoved by the pregnant woman that it wasn't fair "two against one". (I suppose he'll charge the unborn Mohawk with pulling a knife or something on him, while the mother abused him!)

The police are now saying that the Mohawks are training their kids to do battle even before they're born! Well, isn't the Mohawk battle cry to "fight from the womb to the tomb"?

One mountie was apparently sent to hospital with internal injuries (from one kick or punch?), and another with a broken jaw! He could have been hit with his own fist or his partners. Perhaps when the other one was winding up to take the pregnant woman out, she ducked and he hit his partner, instead of her. (That unborn warrior and his mother are two tough Mohawks!) So now they want to come into the territory to arrest the pregnant woman and her descendant.

During the height of this standoff, the heavily equipped RCMP and SQ were waiting a mile away, near the Kahnawake Survival School, thinking about coming into the territory.

There were ten police vehicles, including two trucks. It sure smelled like a set up. Some Mohawks, including a chief, drove over to talk to them and were informed by the police they were coming in and would shoot at anyone carrying even a stick.

The RCMP and SQ were then informed by the Mohawks, "Well, in that case, we're not going to wait for you with sticks!" So the RCMP and SQ decided to think about whether

they would come in or not.

It took a while, but, as you can guess, by midnight, eight of the police vehicles had disappeared, and two were left hiding further up the road, behind some bushes, hoping no one would spot them (but they were). Several dozen Mohawk men stayed behind just in case.

The Mohawk saga continues ...

**Tuesday, November 26, 1991**  
**The Crown Bombs Again**

MNNS - The political show trial in Quebec Superior Court arising out of the Mohawk War at Oka continued.

It was "Voir dire" day again (holding court without the jury) so that Crown Prosecutor Francois *Fly by the Seat of the Pants* Briere and what's left of his troop of SQ officers (the ones not being charged with drug dealing) run around Toronto trying to serve subpoenas on news cameramen who were at Oka. Judge Greenberg once again decided that Briere needed more time to get his act together and adjourned the trial at noon to start tomorrow morning at 9:30. (This is getting tedious!) So we all had to drive back to Kahnawake, Akwesasne and Kanehsatake.

In the next courtroom an SQ officer was charged with selling five kilograms of cocaine and was let out on \$5,000 bail. Selling drugs is certainly a great danger to society and to children, and involves murder and other illicit activities. But our warriors who threatened no one had to pay \$50,000 bail for their freedom. (Such is justice. Isn't this flagrant racism?)

The Canadian Army soldiers, those strutting fools, aren't any better. Two from the 22nd Regiment, the Van Don'ts (the regiment that was in Oka), are on trial for the murder of a 16 year old boy in Germany. Also, three other soldiers from this same regiment are in jail for breaking into an armoury during the Mohawk crisis, stealing guns for the future Quebec Army. (They forgot to steal the firing mechanisms. Way to go, boys!). They even killed the security guard.

They told some Mohawks they met in jail that they had hoped that our warriors would get the blame for this gaffe. But their scheme shot blanks and they're in jail now.

About 50 photos were produced of the September 1, 1990

advance of the Canadian Army around the Treatment Centre, which Briere said he wasn't going to introduce as evidence. That's because they were taken 25 years ago in Vietnam!

The SQ managed to find Anthony Stewart of CFTO who filmed a sequence of the September 1st advance of thousands of Canadian Army soldiers with their nuclear weaponry, tanks, anti tanks, and anti tank tanks, around the 50 or so heavily unarmed Mohawks in Kanehsatake.

Owen Young, lawyer for the defendants, questioned him in great detail on the technical aspects of his tapes and showed how they are similar to wiretaps, in that they are taken out of context, edited and then broadcast. They cannot be admitted as evidence.

Briere's reaction was, to say the least, hysterical, "I have no questions." (And this was his own witness, which he spent so much time and effort trying to find and delayed the trial for).

Shaney Komulainen, the photographer charged with attacking a soldier with a machete, was pacing the halls of St. Jerome awaiting her jury's decision.

Canadian Army soldier GI Jean Keable said she attacked him, and another soldier said he saw GI Jean being attacked (which is all the evidence they had).

An army photographer, Lamontagne, testified that they lied (so, not all Canadian Army soldiers are liars, murderers and thieves).

Throughout her trial next door to the courtroom of our three warriors, the SQ almost wore out their jackboots running back and forth taking notes to make sure GI Jean and the other soldiers who are testifying against our three don't contradict themselves and each other.

Anyway, Shaney was today acquitted of the charge.



Bravo! (Briere must be depressed! He'll have to double up on his valium before he blows a gasket!)

Warrior bashing has started up again since that Saturday night fight in Kahnawake, when the pregnant Mohawk woman knocked out those two RCMP who were doing a routine harassment check.

Immediately, after the incident the SQ (who boss the RCMP) issued an official statement that 10 warriors, not the pregnant woman and her unborn warrior, had beaten up the mounties. Nobody believes the SQ anyway.

Then Madam Lise *Foaming at the Mouth* Bourgeault, Member of Parliament for Oka, in her usual hysteria got up in the House of Commons yesterday during question period to say that the warriors are "war mongers", among other things.

Bourgeault wants the warriors to pay some attention to her. She blamed the Mohawk Crisis for her miscarriage. (Who needs another Lise Bourgeault?)

Then both Canada and the United States simultaneously issued statements that the Mohawks are being scrutinized by their federal intelligence agencies. What for? What they found out was that the younger Mohawks idolize their parents for their bravery, their commitment, and their honour. How's that?

The trial continues ...

## Wednesday, November 27, 1991 Courtly Show And Tell

MNNS - It was another V.D. (voir dire) day. The Judge said, "We are beginning to look like a bunch of incompetents with all these delays. (Don't blame it on the defence!) I put the blame on no one."

Owen Young, lawyer for the warriors, presented a motion once again on the Crown's withholding of evidence.

Owen pointed out that in one of the videos the Crown had provided it wasn't Lasagna but someone else who faced soldier R2-D2 Cloutier in the famous face off. This revelation stunned the Judge and Briere. They almost fell through the floor. Suddenly the videos were no longer important. This fact is crucial in determining the guilt or innocence of the accused.

The greatest justice system in the galaxy (its out of this world) suffered another setback, because this video discredited the Crown's chief witness, Canadian war hero R2-D2 Cloutier.

Tomorrow R2-D2 is going to be cross-examined and he'll be discredited. He said on the video, "You mudder fucker" and "you mudder fucking sucker". All that salt peter must have affected his mind, because he said he made no comments. Owen said this evidence was "deadly" as to the outcome of the guilt or innocence of the accused.

Briere, Crown Prosecutor, his voice cracking, said he found 60 more tapes in the Surete du Quebec bottom drawer, known as the SQ Archives, behind the donut box.

Judge Greenberg asked, "Do we have to look at everything from the archives in Kahnawake, Kanehsatake, Akwesasne, other parts of Canada, and even before Columbus came?"

At this rate, it should take 180 years. We don't know how many tapes the Army has in their library behind the cases of Labatts 50. The beer was found in their tents in Kahnawake right near the Mercier Bridge at the *Bay of Pigs*, where the soldiers used to party during the Crisis.

Judge Greenberg told Briere, "The next thing you will do, you will be asking us to produce the 'bridge' as evidence!"

When Owen presented his motion for either disclosure of the tapes and photographs or the dropping of counts 57 to 59, Briere limply waved his hands and said, "Oh, Owen, you're being so silly."

Judge Greenberg told Briere he could have given them to Owen this past summer to view them before the trial. Instead Briere withheld them until today.

We found out Briere keeps a "pagette" in his right pocket, (right near the you-know-what!) which vibrates to alert him when he has important calls. No wonder he goes "O-oh, a-ah" every once in a while! He probably told his wife, "Call me every half hour, my cabbage!"

Owen is taking more and more time explaining the finer points of the law to the Judge. I think Owen should send him a consultation bill for this, or be kept on a retainer, or Greenberg should go back to Judge's school.

Then Briere in a weakened voice said, "I don't understand the defence's demands." (He realizes the defence's arguments are valid and that he has no case.)

Let's get this over with by sending Briere a video of the *Black Robe*, which shows graphically what the Mohawks did to the "black robes" in the past.

During lunch at the coffee shop near the court, Briere walked haughtily by the Indian supporters with his blond Barbie Doll cohort, who was wearing a Club Z imitation mink coat to match her imitation blond hair. Briere was animated,

but started shaking when he saw the Indians.

After lunch Briere announced to the court, "There seems to be a total of 180 cassettes on Oka and Kahnawake in the SQ files."

There are 90 from September 1 to 30, 1990, as well as 443 news broadcasts from five different networks.

Briere said there were also electronic surveillance tapes during the crisis, which are not in the public domain but are part of the police inquiry. There are wiretaps and interceptions of 22 radio transmissions.

Also there are 6,000 newspaper clippings in an album kept by the SQ. Briere doesn't want any of this admitted as evidence, because there is nothing in them that can be used against the accused. Briere tried to argue that these were not for public domain. (He doesn't want us to get our hands on this material.)

The question is how do we protect the rights of the accused.

There are also over 900 SQ police officers who brought their own personal cameras and took their own pictures of the warriors for souvenirs. They even posed with such renowned warriors as Harvey *Party Animal* Nicholas, and asked for autographs. 4,000 soldiers did the same thing.

Major Alain *Weird Al* Tremblay kept his own personal library of photos, videos, memorabilia and montages. He even wants Lasagna to autograph these pictures for his personal memoirs. Some of these films are now used as Canadian Armed Services recruitment films (to join the Warriors!).

Briere viewed about 50 videos that the Army had in Ottawa and made copies of 25.

The Judge has to decide by tomorrow morning at 9:30 if he is going to keep the show on the road, which entails the

defence looking at all the material, or throw out counts 57 to 59 against the accused. He has recalled the jury, for who knows what!

He could stay the proceedings or throw out the charges. Briere got mad and said, "In that case, you may as well throw out everything." (Yeh, why not?)

Briere said he tried to subpoena Dennis Nicholas through Warren White of the Kahnawake Peacekeepers, but found that Mr. White was away on international Mohawk Nation business in Europe.

Ronnie Bonspille refused to testify once again because he claims he has to rebuild his ambulance empire. It went bankrupt after a *LaPresse* story stated he had raped 6 girls in his ambulance. So he sent his wife, Sue Ellen, to testify on his behalf.

Corey Jacobs also refused to testify because he is under psychiatric treatment for lonesomeness, lack of friends, and the "I don't get no respect" syndrome. All because he gave evidence against his own people.

## Thursday, November 28, 1991 Hallelujah! Our First Big Win

MINNS - Today Judge Greenberg decided to give a "permanent stay" to our three warriors because the SQ and the Crown Prosecutor withheld evidence from the defence, in this case hundreds of tapes of the Oka Crisis.

And as the Army were also "peace officers" during the crisis, their tapes in Ottawa, Val Cartier, Quebec City, Paris, London, Major Alain *Weird Al* Tremblay's personal collection and other materials were supposed to be given to the defence too. It looks like these will have to be looked at and analyzed for the trial that's starting in February 1992 of the 41 other Oka defendants.

A "stay" does not mean our men have to live in St. Jerome. It means that some of the worst charges have been thrown out permanently - Counts 57 and 59 on obstructing the Canadian Army and the SQ and participating in a riot, .

It is a big defeat for Crown Prosecutor Francois Briere and he looked it! He's chewed his nails right down. It was his birthday today and one of our warriors walked by him and sang "Happy Birthday" and asked him, "Did you like our birthday present?"

It was a big victory! Now the crown has to concentrate on separate smaller counts that took place from September 1st to 26th, without tying them into the larger charges.

The Judge ordered that all this material has to be turned over to the defence, that the report of the ballistics expert be made available (although Dione has since been fired from the forensic lab where he worked), that Judy *Sue Ellen* Bonspille, George *Grand KKKlan Chief* Martin, Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne and Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs be recalled to the witness box.

So Judge Greenberg thinks he has buried the beast of disclosure by ruling in favour of our warriors on these two counts, but he is more concerned with how he looks to the public. He doesn't want them to see his messy court.

### Private G.I. Jean Keable

For about half an hour Briere and G.I. Jean looked at pictures of G.I. Jean's trip to Oka during the summer of 1990.

"O-oh, there's me in the Pines ... See me standing next to the warrior ... Here I am next to the lacrosse box ... This is my favourite, next to this Pine tree with the golf course in the background ... And this is my good side."

Briere was finally satisfied that G.I. Jean recognized himself.

However, G.I. Jean could not recognize any of the warriors or soldiers in the pictures. (Funny how he remembered the warriors better the last time he was in court.) His memory is failing since Tuesday's acquittal of journalist Shaney Komulainen in the court room next door. He was the chief witness against her that, on September 1, 1990, she had attacked him like a piece of sugar cane with a machete as the Army advanced on the Treatment Centre. An Army photographer, Lamontagne, said no such thing happened.

G.I. Jean finally recognized a few of his army buddies - *Conan the Barbarian* Berube (who has a tattoo on his left forearm), Private Tremble and Sgt. Paradise.

Under the command of *Conan the Barbarian*, who reported to Col. *Dangle* Daigle, starting at 7:30 pm of September 1, 1990 they went along Highway 344 and into the Pines to the right of the Mohawk cemetery.

"We formed a line to prevent the adverse party (that's us) from crossing over. We had a few confrontations with warriors. We pushed and swore at each other."

He referred to Stanley Cohen as a "partisan of the warriors". (Heh! Heh!)

G.I. Jean pointed out "with pleasure" Lasagna in the courtroom, "He is the gentleman with the white hair. He had black hair before."

G.I. Jean said that Tremble and Lasagna stared at each other, and that Tremble's weapon was pointing upwards. Tremble and another warrior also pushed each other.

"I don't know which warrior pushed him. Everyone was in the 'red zone' (Is that what they now call the red man's land?) to minimize their losses."

This warrior had a face to face confrontation with another person who was shoved. Then G.I. Jean saw the confrontation between the warrior and R2-D2. There were no gestures by the warrior involved with R2-D2. He was not able to hear what was said.

"The warrior had his hat with the brim turned up, wearing flip up glasses, camo scarf, carrying an AK47 and wearing camo pants."

The soldiers were armed with Canadian C7 5.56 calibres with a double charge and a 9m hand gun. (I don't know what any of this means.) He said that the warriors in the Pines did not have the same type of weapon. Some had AKF74s.

Briere started to lose some of his steam here.

Julio Peris, lawyer for the defendants, questioned G.I. Jean. "On September 1st you were part of a military movement that went into the Pines. Did you have any expectations?."

G.I. Jean said, "Everything was kept under total secrecy by Major Tremblay and Col. Daigle."

Around 11:00 September 1st they gathered their things and advanced on the Mohawks. Major *Weird Al* Tremblay said it was to be as peaceful as possible (without blowing out the



brains of the Mohawks if they resisted). (People seem to forget that the Mohawks were hit first, the Army tried to kill us, and it is natural for people who are hit to hit back, especially Mohawks.)

G.I. Jean's regiment was the 2nd Battalion of the 22nd Regiment, of the Van Doos (or Don'ts). The whole regiment moved to Oka – the infantry, 5 companies of PC or CP, the Commanding Companies A, B and C. There was also a tactical support company, which included four platoons, Reconnaissance Platoon, Mortar Platoon, Anti-tank Platoon, Pioneers, mechanics, clerks, typists, cooks, bottle washers and groupies to shine their apples.

The tanks had 12.5mm submachine guns with a submachine gun on the right side and somewhere else, and smoke grenades on the towers. There were 1,100 soldiers who came in that day with all their latest armaments.

Julio asked, "How many Natives did you surround with all this?"

Embarrassed, G.I. Jean answered, "About 50 Mohawk men, women and children."

G.I. Jean was part of the mortar firing patrol, whose object was to support Company C under Major Weird Al, under orders of Col. Dangle.

G.I. Jean then went into some technical talk to confuse everybody, "The data was ten figures with ten numbers. These coordinates were predetermined according to shells that fell onto the terrain ... If the order was given, I had to make sure the shell fell where it was supposed to." (right on the Mohawks)

What he really meant was that he was supposed to kill the Mohawks.

"Our orders were to 'neutralize' (nuke) the enemy and their vehicles, to put every combatant out of service, to

destroy (with glee) their vehicles."

G.I. Jean then neutralized a red Camaro which was peacefully parked near the lacrosse box, minding its own business. He slit her tires.

"I will not neutralize an enemy just for a dirty look. But, if he calls me names, I would immobilize the person by putting him on the ground so that he does not move anymore."

Julio asked, "You would kill a person?"

G.I. Jean changed his story, "No. The instructions were not to neutralize, but to have them withdraw, to push back the barricades (of two logs), within a perimeter."

"Was the use of force left to the soldier to decide?"

"No. Any force would have to come from direct orders. But when you are alone, you make a decision. If a weapon was pointed in our face, we had a bullet in our chamber to take care of that person. All the weapons had a security latch. It can shoot 1 million cartridges in only 2.4 seconds. (wow!) After September 1 there were directives on this which were clearer." (They were ordered to provoke the Mohawks in order to have an excuse to kill them. Even a rat will fight back!)

G.I. Jean had a CF Canadian made 5.56 calibre something or other. To fire, you put the safety catch in the position to shoot and pull the trigger. Section commandants are also given Belgian min. 5.56 calibres and C9 grenades, but for the Oka native crisis these weapons were given also to rank and file soldiers.

When Julio started to ask G.I. Jean about his credibility and testimony at the Shaney Komulainen case, Briere jumped up and said, "Why are you asking him about that? I do not believe that a person can be innocent. An acquittal only means that there wasn't enough evidence to prove that she was guilty."

Said a Mohawk supporter, "I wouldn't want to be a Judge. Imagine putting on your cape every day and looking for a victim. Then arguing and arguing all day long to put him in jail. There's not much difference between a Judge and Dracula, is there?"

Friday, November 29, 1991

## No More Can-Can At The Follies Briere

MNNS - The political show trial of our freedom fighters arising out of the 1990 Mohawk War at Oka continued.

Crown Prosecutor, Francois Briere, has to dance the *don't-don't* since that decision came down yesterday to throw out the most serious charges, that of obstructing the Canadian Army and the Surete du Quebec, and participating in a riot.

However, some of the soldiers are still lying on the witness stand for the SQ. Why? After all it is the SQ's war, not the Army's?

Soldiers, G.I. Jean Keable, and R2-D2 Cloutier, were brought back to the witness stand for cross-examination by lawyers for the warriors, Owen Young and Julio Peris.

G.I. Jean lied in court on November 18, 1991 that Lasagna was the soldier in the famous face to face confrontation with R2-D2. (Don't we all look alike to them?) Today he came clean and told the truth. "It was not Lasagna," said he. In a CBC film, Lasagna could be seen in the confrontation, but standing about 30 feet away in the background looking around. G.I. Jean even said the face to face confrontations "were common".

Julio asked G.I. Jean about his testimony on November 18, 1991, "You testified the warrior was Lasagna in the face-off with Cloutier."

"Yes, that is correct."

"On September 1st did you know who it was?"

"No."

"Did you think it was Lasagna?"

"No."

"You never believed that it was Lasagna?"

"No. After looking at photos circulating in the company and throughout the world, I believe it was a gentleman named William Sears (of Akwesasne). That information was given to me shortly after the confrontation, less than a week later. I knew it was not Lasagna because they do not have the same weapon and do not dress the same way." (and Bill Sears's about a foot taller)

"You saw no other confrontations between the warrior and Cloutier?"

"That is correct."

"The one with Tremble where there is some pushing, that is not Lasagna?"

"That is correct."

"What distance were you from that?"

"Three feet." G.I. Jean said there were no weapons pointed. He could not hear any words in the second confrontation that he witnessed because the soldier's knees were knocking too loud.

"These confrontations of face to face, or eye to eye, or cheek to cheek contact, did you classify them as psychological confrontations?"

"It was intimidation rather than psychological."



This is your 15 minutes of fame, kid!

In September 1990 G.I. Jean had made a declaration to the SQ, but they were not interested in the confrontation with Lasagna. "They wanted to know what happened with me, around me, with Cohen (the lawyer for some of the warriors), and Komulainen (the journalist)." When the SQ asked about Lasagna, G.I. Jean did not clarify that it was *not* Lasagna in the famous face to face.

On the other hand, R2-D2 Cloutier, the Canadian media macho man, did not come clean. As a result of the face off, he was promoted to Master Corporal and commended by Brian Mulroney, the Prime Minister of the temporary occupied lands of Canada.

R2-D2 examined the CBC tapes of the September 1st advance on the Mohawk at Kanehsatake. Here the trial started to turn into a big video party.

R2-D2 looked at the CBC tape *The War of the Roses* and identified Bill Sears as the "Unknown Warrior", with Lasagna standing behind the two who were facing off. This contradicted his previous statement when he said the warrior was Lasagna. Also, this time he did not recognize any of the warriors in the tape or photos. He could barely recognize his own buddies.

Owen Young reminded R2-D2 that the warrior showed him a bullet which he took out of his magazine. "Two different warriors showed you a bullet and said he was going to shoot you in the leg, it was going to go to the heart, and out through your head? Both did and said exactly the same things?"

"Yes".

"Was it two different times, once with the Unknown Warrior and once with Lasagna?"

"Yes."

"During the advance there were many journalists everywhere. I bet you're going to say that no journalist was around when you had your confrontation with Lasagna."

"That's right!" (The room broke into peals of laughter.)

"During training, how did you deal with a situation in which your opponent said something to you?"

"Not to comment."

R2-D2 said he learned he was being posted to Oka at the end of July 1990, was given no instructions or guidance as to why he was being sent there. He was told his opponents were Mohawk warriors.

"Did they explain why your opponent was there?"

"No."

R2-D2 Cloutier said he got nervous and upset when the warriors spoke about the land, and told him, "Get off our land". He did not like it when they said, "You are too young to die over a piece of land" and "You should go back to school".

Asked if he understood what they said, R2-D2 said, "I only understood the words, not the meaning."

His gang included Doggone, Shellac, Fartin, Lard, Paradise, Ruler and himself.

Owen continued, "Shortly after the events of September 1st, you met the SQ to discuss the face-off. You told him about the two warriors, the one with the flip up sun glasses and what he said. The two confrontations were fresh in your mind, only five days before, one produced the world famous picture of the Unknown Warrior with the sun glasses, who was not Lasagna. It was clearly in your mind on September 6th?"

"Yes."

The SQ had put this photo in front of him and he signed his statement.

"When you told the officer about the event, you described Lasagna."

"Yes."

"But your statement to the SQ says nothing about shooting you in the leg and nothing about a bullet through your heart. Why did you leave it out?"

"Because that day I did a summary. I said he had glasses and he did not have them. There are things I did forget. Seeing the events over again in the video has reinforced my memory."

"Is that when you learned about the glasses?"

"I forgot to mention it on September 6th about Lasagna but I did remember the Unknown Warrior."

"When did you remember him?"

"In the evening."

"You knew at the time what you had signed was true. Now you realized it was wrong in the evening."

"I am saying it was incomplete."

"What steps did you take to correct it."

"None."

"You knew this was important. It was part of a police investigation. You had seen Lasagna a number of times. You knew who he was."

"Yes."

"Did you forget things about the Unknown Warrior too?"

"No."

"Even though you knew Lasagna, you forgot to mention it. He stood out in your mind. In fact, when he pulled out the bullet and showed it to you, you felt nervous. You felt he was really going to shoot you with it?"

"Yes."

"You said it's not every day you wake up and expect a gun to be pointed at your face."



R2-D2 corrected Owen, "He did not point a gun, it was in a gun sling."

"It was a once in a lifetime event. Yet five days later you forget to mention it to the police. During the advance in the Pines the journalists were everywhere taking pictures."

"But not in my sight."

The cross-examination of R2-D2 Cloutier will continue on Monday, December 2, 1991.

Said an Indian supporter who was asked what she thought of all this, "All the secret policemen, army intelligence and everybody else sits in the shadows of the court room, while the Judge, prosecutor, lawyers and witnesses talk about how the soldiers and tanks were running everywhere over our Indian land."

"Don't they see how we Indian people saw the use of armed force on us! When the government uses tanks against us, we know the government is bankrupt. This kind of dictatorship government uses so much money so there is less to spend on the society. What we need instead of this trial is more money spent on our future, our children, to clean the land, water and air for them."

## Monday, December 2, 1991 Lasagna And The Unknown Warrior

MNNS - The cross-examination of R2-D2 Cloutier continued today.

Owen began by asking Cloutier of his tall tales to the SQ on September 6, 1990, five days after the September 1st Canadian Army's advance on the warriors.

"In your declaration you describe two face to face confrontations with the warriors, one with the Unknown Warrior with the flip up glasses, and the other with Lasagna ... and the Unknown Warrior used a bullet."

"Yes."

"Now on November 18, 1991, when you were questioned by the Crown, you say you faced three or four warriors. One was Lasagna and the other was wearing a small blue cap, who threw his gun on the ground and asked if you wanted to fight with him."

"Today, December 2, 1991, you say that you had two confrontations with warriors with bullets - the Unknown Warrior and Lasagna."

### The Legend of the Unknown Warrior

Sometime after his November 18, 1991 testimony, and before he gave evidence last Friday, R2-D2 viewed some videos.

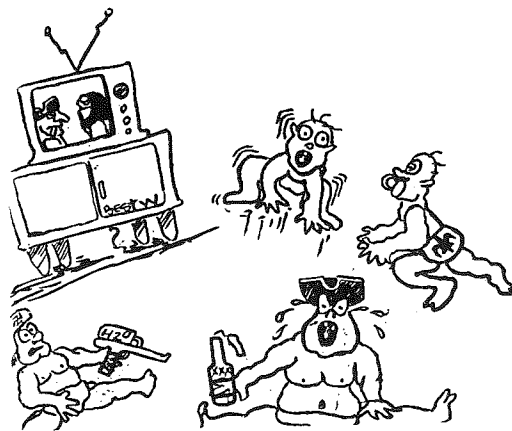
At the Best Western Motel, before his November 18th testimony, he watched all the videos three, four and sometimes five times with his buddies Doggone, Shellac, Ruler, Paradise and Tremble. Then they discussed them.

After his testimony they watched the videos again. And he had numerous meetings with Francois *Inspector Clouseau* Briere, the Crown Prosecutor, at the Citadel in Quebec City,

Val Cartier and parts unknown.

R2-D2 admitted that Inspector Clouseau Briere had set up these video parties for him and all his army buddies. They looked at them over and over again with their coach. Several other video parties were set up, including one in October 1990 a month after the incident.

As hard as they looked, they could find no face to face confrontations with Lasagna on any of the videos. In fact, R2-D2 Cloutier could not remember exactly when the face to face confrontation with Lasagna happened, but it was before the one with the Unknown Warrior.



Best Western video party.

Owen asked, "When you were being questioned by Crown Prosecutor Briere you said the first encounter was with the warrior with the blue cap, who had an AK47 with the magazines tied together. Now you say before that face-off you had one with Lasagna."

"That is correct."

In some footage, the Unknown Warrior says to R2-D2, "You're nervous perhaps?". Lasagna stands behind in the distance.

In another scene Lasagna walks into the picture and tells him, "You are over the line", pointing to an imaginary line that appears to be drawn on the ground. The warrior in the blue cap walks by with a shovel (on his way to his garden) and says to R2-D2, "Back off, you asshole."

R2-D2 said he did not understand much of anything.

"We did not have a line as such."

He agreed that the warriors were sure of themselves. It showed in the way they spoke, the way they handled themselves, the way they moved. They told R2-D2, "You are too young to die over a piece of land ... This our land ... You have crossed the line."

Julio Peris, lawyer for warriors, questioned R2-D2.

"On August 25th, you were already near that barricade. Around August 25th, the military was already close. Had you started visual contact with the warriors at that time?"

"Yes."

"Were your weapons already positioned near the barricades on August 25th, such as the grizzlies, machine guns, mortar dischargers, gizmos and what-nots?"

"Yes. We were waiting for the order to advance."

His group was the first to penetrate the barricades. Major *Weird Al* Tremblay was the first to come in contact with the warriors. The groups were dispersed, the barricades were dismantled and barbed wire was put up.

R2-D2 did not recognize any of the warriors and could not tell how many there were.

Julio asked R2-D2 about the *fire and movement position*.

R2-D2 replied, "In the position of fire and movement you advance and fire on the enemy."

R2-D2 explained that the front rank soldiers drop to the ground on their bellies, aim and fire. Then soldiers from behind move about three paces in front of the soldiers on the

ground, drop down on their bellies, aim and shoot. The soldiers who first fired from the ground get up move in front of the soldiers who just fired, drop to the ground, aim and fire. The sequence continues as long as needed. This way a squad of soldiers can maintain a constant advance with heavy fire power directed on the enemy.

(The fire and movement position is an aggressive military tactic. Any sign that your opponents are about to execute it is a sign that bullets are about to head your way. And you don't take this position unless you have a bullet in your chamber ready to fire.)

R2-D2 nearly caused a shootout. Upon first facing a line of warriors he dropped down on his belly and aimed. The warriors reacted thinking he was about to shoot.

R2-D2's superior yelled at him to stand up immediately. This calmed the warriors' agitation seeing that a fire and movement sequence was not about to begin. The warriors laughed at R2-D2 and started to intimidate him. They yelled, "Go back to soldier school."

Under Julio's questioning of the incident, R2-D2 tried to shrug off the foolishness of his actions. He said, "My firearm was not loaded." (Tell us another one.)



Get up, you fool, before you start a war!

Briere got excited and did not want R2-D2 to answer any more questions. His witness was losing credibility and sympathy. Briere said, "This is a soldier facing criminals."

The warriors had picked on him because he put himself in a fire and movement position on the ground and almost started a war. R2-D2, rather than being a hero, turns out to be a bum!

*Side note:* Cloutier's illustrious military career was short lived. Celebrated as a war hero by the Right Honourable Brian Mulroney, R2-D2 was later caught with cocaine, followed by a hit and run violation. The military discharged him not too honourably.

### Sgt. Joe Blow Brault

He's a big tall goofy looking guy. He went to Oka on August 25th, reporting to Lt. Gender, who reported to Major *Weird Al* Tremblay. Joe Blow was part of the September 1st advance on the Pines.

"We approached St. Germain Road barricade, which was unmanned, and set up some barbed wire. Then we advanced on the barricades in the Pines. Several masked warriors were there."

Joe Blow said they received verbal orders. His platoon of 100 men and 10 to 12 Grizzly tanks were prepared for battle.



Joe Blow, razor wire expert.

"They ordered the infantrymen to go onto St. Germain Road and into a cornfield. We waited there for orders from our platoon commanders to open fire. (on the corn?) The order was supposed to be given to everyone at the same time.

"We stayed at the junction of St. Germain for a few days and roasted corn. The soldiers, all French speaking, set up barbed wire barricades, verified car plates and did not talk to the Indians." (who only spoke Mohawk or English)

Then the soldiers received orders to advance. On September 1st, they started to dismantle the barricades of turned cars, the first near Mo-John's farm. There was nobody there. Another barricade was a trailer with warriors going around it.

Joe Blow said, "When we arrived near Mongeon's place, there were three or four warriors who started shouting insults to us. They backed off into the woods.

"There was a sandpile, which we blew up, planted a flag and put up some barbed wire.

"We encountered barricades with names, which were trenches, dirt piles with propane gas bottles.

"We advanced in a stretched out line in the woods. I was in the back with my platoon, just behind Major Tremblay. We heard screams and hollering. The Lieutenant told us to move over to one side."

Julio asked, "What orders were you given if you met warriors?"

"We had to advance until we encountered them. When we had contact, we were to stop. Everywhere we went, we installed razor wire.

"Another barricade was a bulldozer for pushing trees. Finally we came upon men, women and children and started to put razor wire around them.

"The warriors were yelling, 'You are on our land ... Get

off our land.' We went ahead and stopped at the corner near the lacrosse playing field. Then we installed some razor wire to protect ourselves.

"We were supposed to dismantle the two logs which made up the barricades. We went by Mongeon's farm and set up some razor wire. I never paid attention to names of places because we have our own names of places and people. (just like the Indians!) We had the engineers, with tractors, dynamite, shovels, razor wire and tanks to remove the tree trunks, so we could advance to Rt. 344."

Then Briere brought out a silent film showing a soldier hammering a stake into the land and putting up some razor wire.

Joe Blow said, "Baby Warrior pulled the razor wire out in a tug of war, let it go and the soldier pulling at the other end went flying.

"The soldiers had fired some of their weapons during the night of September 1st. Lasagna came and told us to be careful because there were women, children and journalists in the Treatment Center, where everyone had been closed in by our advance."

Asked how many times he had seen Lasagna, he said, "1500 times." (including the videos) After September 1st they installed razor wire across the road in front of the Treatment Center. Lasagna had come out with and without a mask.

Asked if he witnessed any face to face confrontations between Lasagna and Cloutier, Joe Blow said, "No."

The Mohawks had yelled at the soldiers "some unpleasant words".

Julio asked, "You also used them?"

"Yes."

Baby Warrior was a young adolescent.

Julio asked, "Why did you call him 'Baby'? That young



warrior you called Baby Warrior, was a term you gave him?"

"Yes."

"You said things to Lasagna and another warrior. Then insults began to be exchanged".

"Lasagna said to me, 'Fuck You. The Baby Warrior, he could kill you and I'm going to kill 20 and you will be the first.'"

*Side note:* In three Komulainen photos, a soldier is hiding behind some trees dressed as a warrior in camouflage, with a camo bandana and his face painted black. He is carrying an AK47. The speculation is he was there to shoot at the soldiers to provoke a deadly confrontation.



The killer Baby Warrior!

## Tuesday, December 3, 1991 Army's Vendetta Against Lasagna Revealed

MNNS - More soldiers today.

### Doggone Deganier

Doggone Deganier is a skinny-necked nervous young kid who tries to do what he is told. He had a few memory lapses today. In the morning he was cooperative, but in the afternoon he wasn't because he had obviously been ordered at lunchtime to be vague. (He also had one of those horrible bologna sandwiches from the court canteen.)

Crown Prosecutor Francois Briere asked him about his posting in Oka during the summer of 1990. He was under the command of Paradise, who reports to Lt. *More-or-Less*. "When did you move to Oka?"

Doggone answered, "I don't remember anymore. I went to Oka in August and was in the Pines on September 1st." He was with his buddies R2-D2, Shellac, Fartin, Paradise, Ruler and some others. His function was to make advances!

"We moved in a stretched out line, known in military jargon as the 'daisy chain'. Sgt. Paradise gave the order to stop the advance." (Then they made advances on each other!)

"Where did you stood in relation to yourself?"

Doggone thought about it and answered, "Well, I was standing looking over the scene. I was 20 ft. from Shellac. Five or six warriors were in the Pines. They were stalking around, telling us to back off from our position. I remained in my position."

Briere asked if he had a 'face to face' with any of the warriors.

"Yes, three of them. My buddies, Shellac and Cloutier, had face to faces too." (Doggone was really nervous, and

during the break he had a May West and washed it down with a Pepsi.)

"You were involved with three individuals, you saw two others, and you faced one yourself?"

Doggone looking blank said, "What?"

"The two involved with Cloutier, did you know any of these by name or sight?"

"By sight, Lasagna ... through the papers, television, and the video parties."

After all those video parties that Briere organized at the Best Western Motel, they had a hard time contradicting each other. Briere again showed videos in court.

One video showed two soldiers walking through the pine forest (on their way to visit their grandmother with a basket of food). There was the warrior with the blue hat carrying a shovel.

Doggone was standing behind a tree watering the cedars when he heard a warrior say, "There's going to be a war by all the natives, and we will fucking wipe your ass." He saw the person facing R2-D2.



Hey, this brew's got a kick!

Briere asked, "On September 2nd what were you doing on Route 344?"

Doggone said, "I was on guard with Ruler and Paradise. A warrior came up to my position and we looked at one another for a few seconds. He uttered a scream (war whoop for the uninitiated). Then he said, 'Today you are going to die.' He nodded his head and left."

Another video showed a warrior talking to Doggone.

Briere asked, "How many times did you see him?"

"Several times. Around TC. He was carrying an M16 in his right hand, a revolver on his belt and a hunting knife strapped to his chest."

They moved to St. Germain barricades and then on September 1st to the Pines. He had been ordered to dismantle the first barricade on St. Germain around August 20th. Then there was a waiting period.

It was Julio's turn to ask questions.

Doggone told Julio about the briefing the Army had given him and his buddies. "Basically, we were told we were going to meet Indians, and to stay calm!."

"When the army advanced, what was the atmosphere like?"

"Quite hot. Tension was high. It was the first confrontation between the military and the Mohawks. The Mohawks started to take out the stakes for the razor wire we were trying to put around them. They were preventing us from putting them into a concentration camp. (They did not seem to like it!)"

"They were harassing us. They were insulting us, saying, 'Get off our land ... This land is not for a golf course ... Our cemetery is sacred.' Most of the Mohawk comments had to do with the Army moving onto the land.

"We told the Indians to let us work. This caused them to

insult us and swear at us more. It was coming from both sides. They were throwing insults and we answered back. It is only normal to answer back if you are insulted in the same fashion you are spoken to."

"As the fuck yous were flying from one side to the other, both were saying the same thing?"

"But we restrained ourselves more." (to words like 'tabernac', and 'sauvage')

Before September 1st, they were given orders on St. Germain to put a bullet in the chamber and put the safety latch at S. "There were 30 or more Mohawks around the St. Germain barricade, men, women and children, masked and unmasked, armed and unarmed. Anything could have happened."

In the Pines tension oozed. Installing the razor wire took a few hours. The Mohawks pulled on the razor wire. Insults flew from one side to the other. Specially on the warrior side. Doggone said, "We only told them to back off. Sometimes there was swearing."

The warriors told him, "You should back off." There was an agreement between the warriors and the Army to each stay on their side of the line and not to come across that line. No soldiers went across that line.

Doggone spoke to Lasagna about the line. "Lasagna said we had no business there, saying it was their land. Lasagna never threatened. The military accepted this and stayed behind that line.

On the September 1st advance Doggone was in his Grizzly, with his buddies.

Julio asked, "Having spent time on St. Germain and having had contact with the Mohawks, when you advanced on September 1st, you knew who you were going up against and how many?"

"Yes."

"You discussed all this with your buddies? You must have had many discussions about your favourite subject, Lasagna?"

"Yes."

"When you advanced, you walked into the Pines and saw the warriors. Many of them were familiar to you. Here you are face to face with the warriors. Did you receive any orders to arm your weapons?"

"No." When the soldiers armed they did it on their own. They were not to put a bullet in the chamber, to remain calm, and to make the Mohawks withdraw in their corner.

"Did you understand by that order that your presence would be sufficient to push the Mohawks back because of your numbers, your overwhelming armaments, artillery, and weapons. You were dressed for combat and you all had a lot of training. It was a show of force."

"Yes, that was the idea."

"So when you went in, you understood it was a clear show of force?"

"Yes, that was my business. To get Mohawks to keep going back and to set up a new barricade to enclose them in the smaller territory."

"When you were in the Pines, did they yell, 'You are on our land'?"

"Always."

Julio asked if the military replied to these insults. Doggone admitted it could have happened a few times.

Julio asked him if in their training did they take any courses that dealt with intimidation. Doggone said no.

"Did it strike you that the Mohawk warriors and people were showing no sign of fear?"

"Yes, but I also was not afraid."

The perimeter was then closed in. A new boundary line was set around the lacrosse field and golf course.

"During the face to face confrontations, the setting up of razor wire around the Lacrosse Box and the encircling of the Mohawks, were the warriors yelling 'Get off our land' and things like that?"

"Sure, as usual."

"Did you see Lasagna?"

"Yes."

Lasagna was not alone, women and children were also around.

It was similar to St. Germain, the Army staying on their side and the Mohawks staying on theirs. The Mohawks made accusations towards the military, about pointing their weapons, and that their movements were overly aggressive.

On September 1st, Lasagna came to see the soldiers in the evening claiming that bullets were being fired from that area.

On September 2nd Doggone saw Lasagna with the media around him coming toward the soldiers saying, 'Today you are going to die.' Then Lasagna left with the media.

Doggone knew who Lasagna was and said of this event, he was approached by "one warrior and an army of 30 journalists". (We should have let the journalists and the Army go at it and we could have taken their pictures).

Doggone said he had seen him on the news. "I knew his surname. It was Lasagna, and I knew his eyes."

Julio asked, "That evening did you see that incident on the television, with members of your group? Did you say, Who does he think he is?"

Doggone said it is normal to talk about reactions he had. He watched it with R2-D2, Shellac, Paradise and Ruler. He did not admit that one of them wanted to get their hands on Lasagna. But they kept track of the incident through the

media.

"Did you see on the media a sign that had on it the following words, 'LASAGNE, YOUR DEAD MEAT - 2R22R'. What does the last part mean?"

"It means 2nd Battalion Royal 22nd Regiment."



### Madonna Robert

A strawberry blond, blue eyed white white man, who was in Oka about two weeks. He handed the provisions over to the Mohawks at the front gate of the concentration camp. The provisions had been stabbed and mutilated by the bayonets of the soldiers.

He was in the area of the Pines, in the advance party, consisting of Major *Weird Al* Tremblay, signaller Villeneuve, Master Warrant officer Gagnon, and Sgt. Joe Blow.

Madonna Robert said, "The warriors were aggressive and did not want us to advance (on the Indian land)."

Briere put another video in Her Majesty's VCR. This one showed the Canadian Army's specialty - installing razor wire around innocent men, women and children. Canadian taxpayers are sending their boys all over the world to do this.



Madonna Robert said, "During the installation a warrior was removing the stakes. Warriors came over, including Lasagna, who spoke to Sgt. Brault."

Owen stopped the questioning because this man talking to Joe Blow was not in Joe Blow's declaration, and so he could not be cross-examined on it.



I know they hurt, but we need them as evidence to nail Lasagna!

## Saturday, December 7, 1991 Rule Of Law vs Law Of Nature

MNNS - The political show trial could not continue for the moment.

Congratulations! The Mohawk Nation is building even while our men and women are on trial, or in jail, or unemployed, or working for nothing or next to nothing! Bravo!

Wednesday, Thursday and Friday, December 4th, 5th and 6th 1991 was turned over to Mohawk Nation building. Two Baby warriors made their way into the world, a son for Lasagna on Thursday morning, and a daughter for 20-20 on Friday morning. (The mother of 20-20's baby is one of the 41 defendants who will be going on trial in February 1992.)

The first thing these warrior babies will probably see is a court room, with rows of strange people who look like penguins sitting around huge blocks of wood, pushing their hands back and forth on top of these blocks of wood. They'll ask, "Did I arrive on Earth, or is this Mars? Where's my mom?"

What is the jury's reaction to all this jumble. (No matter how well the white man sets up his system, nature helps the Indians undo it.) Will the jury throw these two new fathers in jail so their families are left to starve on welfare? On Thursday morning the SQ, Crown Prosecutor Briere and the other penguins were walking back and forth like expectant fathers while the jury watched, until Judge Greenberg finally decided to adjourn court for the day to return Friday morning. Then 20-20's baby wasn't born until Friday morning, so court was called off again. Crown Prosecutor Briere seriously thinks our warriors did this on purpose to foil his case.

The question of the administration of the trial of the 41

other Oka defendants, due to start on February 3rd 1992 in the Montreal Court, has come up. The Judge for that trial, Justice Tannenbaum, has asked for all the due dates of all the pregnant defendants so that the Court, the Crown, the army and witnesses can schedule the judicial proceedings accordingly. Soldiers will be recalled from the four corners of the world to testify.

Also, since at least five of the defendants will be nursing mothers, the court has been requested to consider appropriate nursing breaks. No humane court would deny the child its mother and its necessary nourishment and nurture (at least no Indian judicial system would).

They also want to know the "moons" of all the women (to avoid PMS?). All men and women may be ordered to confide to Judge Tannenbaum their conjugal arrangements and their menstrual cycles. The white man's artificial justice must march on and cannot be hampered by the laws of nature - laws the Indians don't break (which the white man's court is finding out).

Judge Greenberg asked in open court if Noriega's wife or any members of the jury are pregnant, adding, "Mine isn't." (Let's hope not! She's 75 years old).



My wife's not expecting. What about yours, Mr. Lazore?

Judge Tannenbaum is seriously considering ordering that the defendants in the forthcoming case not get pregnant, on pain of being charged with contempt of court. If they get pregnant, will he demand they be induced so that they have their babies on the weekend and not interfere with the court's schedule? (White people have been known to do such things!) If he does this, the women defendants will make him swallow a whole bottle of castor oil, or make him go to a colonics clinic for a good psychological enema!

One of the 41 Oka defendants from Akwesasne will already be serving a long sentence when the trial starts on February 3, 1991. The dilemma for the Crown is whether they will simply issue a bench warrant for his non-appearance and arrest him after he comes out of the U.S. jail, or extradite him, which will take six months, or forget about him.

It is their law, their system and their dilemma. We just do what comes naturally during these times of "trial", and the Mohawk Nation carries on with the help of our allies.

Because of the quashing of counts 57 and 59, 33 soldiers who were scheduled to testify have been dropped from the list of witnesses, leaving 9 to stay behind and carry the banner for the Canadian Army's Liars Club.

We keep asking the question: *What did we ever do to deserve this treatment we're getting?* A white man gave us a simple answer, "You upset us!" Also it has been learned that in Oka the government was caught off guard. Next time there is an Indian uprising in Canada, will the government be ready?

## Monday, December 9, 1991 More Soldiers Bite The Dust

MNNS - The Canadian Army's reputation and credibility is being devastated by this case. The soldiers are being caught in lies and contradictions which are embarrassing the Army and Canada. They're going to be more humiliated when they lose!

A Corporal Landman, a blond, blue-eyed, public relations man for the Army has been sitting in the court room every day. He is there to resurrect the fallen image of the Army as a result of the Oka debacle. One soldier, Shellac, said Landman was organizing the video parties for both this case and Shaney Komulainen's.

Madonna Robert continued his testimony today. This guy is used to giving orders, not answering questions. However, he bit the dust like the four soldiers before him.

He was in charge of one of the sections of Platoon B when the Army advanced on September 1st to the Lacrosse Box in the Pines at Kanehsatake and surrounded the warriors. The maneuver included an advance group, followed by three groups - a central, right and left flank. Madonna Robert was in the left flank and Major *Weird Al* Tremblay was covering the Center.

Weird Al thought he was Field Marshal Montgomery advancing on Germany during World War II. Weird Al Tremblay was actually directing the sequel to *War and Remembrance*. It's too bad Weirido dropped out of the case. It would have been fun interviewing (oops! cross-examining) him.

Madonna Robert corrected Julio Peris, lawyer for the defendants, who referred to the Mohawks as the "enemy" of the Army, rather than the "adverse party" (which makes us

seem more like chess pieces).

As the cross-examination continued, Madonna Robert got more and more impatient and cross. In fact, he was downright hostile. He was embarrassed to tell about the complex military movements into the Pines, only to find no one there, or perhaps one or two warriors in the distance, or maybe one or two empty tents.

When they had advanced on one set of tents they found 10 people around, including men, women and children. He refused to recall whether he saw the children there.

This guy must have had some Chinese food last evening near the Best Western Motel, where all the soldier witnesses stay, because he was drinking water like it was going out of style.

Madonna Robert said, "I gave my men a description of the adverse party, ordered them how to react to the Indians and about our policy on weapons - not to put a bullet in the chamber and not to point their weapons. (Well, we know they didn't follow his orders, because the soldiers had bullets in their weapons, were pointing them at the warriors, and were locking and loading.)

"They were to do absolutely nothing but continue moving. We were to keep the next superior level informed and let Major Tremblay make the decisions. (We know they were doing plenty!)

"The warriors were trying to intimidate us to withdraw, by pointing weapons towards us. (What about the tanks and machine guns they pointed at the warriors!) "They were screaming at us like a bunch of Indians! (He refused to give us a demonstration - it would have scared the jury.)

"The warriors screamed at us, 'Go back, you fucking assholes ... Get out of here ... This is our land.' I ordered my men not to reply." (But we know they did!)

Madonna Robert said he got mad because the warriors were intimidating his young inexperienced *wet behind the ears* soldiers "who were not as courageous as necessary", because they had weapons pointed at them. He admitted that Sgt. Joe Blow called one young Mohawk a "Baby Warrior".



I'm gonna soak dem warriors!

He told his men to run for cover behind trees or hide in the trenches and to await his orders. With regard to the fire and movement position, he said this was done only in time of war. (So Oka must have been a war because the soldiers did take this position.)

Madonna Robert said there were television cameras and journalists all over the place. He also did not like Julio's reference to "razor wire" that was placed around the Indian men, women and children to contain them. He preferred the terms "barbed wire" or "concertina" wire (music to his ears).

He said he never saw the cemetery, even though he walked over it (and tripped on some of the tombstones).

The first time Madonna Robert met with the SQ and Military Police was over the Baby Warrior incident involving Sgt. Joe Blow.

Julio showed Madonna Robert a report about the September 1st encounters that said nothing about Joe Blow's claim that Lasagna had made the threat, "Twenty are to be killed and you will be the first."

Madonna Robert said this alleged threat came out first in court, and that the reason it is not mentioned in the Val Cartier Army Report is because it was not considered important! (end of testimony)

### Michel Shellac

He is a short slight guy, very nervous, with a short beard a moustache. This guy has charged Kahn-Tineta Horn (that's me) with threatening to kill him. He also was a main witness against journalist Shaney Komulainen, who was recently acquitted of threatening Sgt. G.I. Jean. (What's Shellac got against women?)

When he and his buds advanced in the Pines in their Grizzly with R2-D2 driving, they arrived and parked near the cemetery. They got out and walked towards the Lacrosse Box. They spotted a few enemies, one had a weapon pointed at him. The order was given to go into the woods (and pick berries!).

Briere brought out another video and Shellac recognized himself on the road leading to the Lacrosse field, removing the propane bottles that the warriors had placed about the golf course.

He recognized the unmasked individual as Lasagna. According to Shellac, Lasagna said to him in a neutral tone, "I am going to shoot a bullet in your head, you are a dummy for coming on land that does not belong to you."

Shellac said he poked fun at Lasagna by asking why he wore a mask, was it "because you're a scaredy cat or do you have bad breath?"



Shellac said Lasagna actually scared him, but that Lasagna told him he did not want to go to jail. (Can you see Lasagna stopping to have a cozy chit-chat with this guy?) Shellac said he froze, stopped, looked at Lasagna, then walked backwards with his weapon pointing carelessly towards Lasagna.

When Shellac's group got to the area of the two tents in the Pines, they heard someone say, "You far from home, boy!" Sgt. Paradise ordered them to get on the ground in the fire and movement position. Shellac called it the "cover position" behind trees or objects to protect themselves and to see what was in front of them. But they were in a defensive position, ready to fire their weapons.

Julio asked, "Did this mean you wait for the enemy to fire first?"

Shellac said in time of war you would wait until the enemy fired first. (What an Army!) Their machine guns can fire 220 bullets in 2 seconds.

"Was the defensive position considered too aggressive by your commanding officer?"

Shellac said he could not specify.

Shellac said he was asked to turn up at the mess hall to meet with the SQ to talk about Stanley Cohen and Shaney Komulainen, whom he, Ruler, Paradise and GI Jean testified against. (Of course you know by now that Shaney was acquitted.)

He made a declaration to the SQ on September 29, 1990, shortly after the Mohawks and their allies came out of the Treatment Center, about other events in the Pines. He was never asked about Lasagna. He did not testify at the preliminary hearing. Although he was frightened out of his wits, the first time he mentioned this meeting with Lasagna was shortly before he testified today.

The trial continues tomorrow ...

## Tuesday, December 10, 1991 The Nuremburg Trials Continue

MNNS - The dismal state of the Canadian Army is becoming more and more apparent as the young whimper snappers come crying before the court about that awful Lasagna. As one of the defendants said, "Why don't they quit while they're ahead. They're making such fools out of themselves and Canada with their wailing and meowing about one *man*, maybe the only one they've ever seen in their lives."

All the soldiers are suffering from CRS (Can't remember shit!) not from battle fatigue. Their Public Relations expert, Madison Ave Landman, runs out of the courtroom every time the witness is told to leave the courtroom so he can coach him.

Crown Prosecutor Briere knows he is losing the case, so he is pulling delay tactics in hope that the three warriors will get fed up and plead bargain to get the whole thing over with.

### Quivering Roy

He's a small short French guy from Shediac, New Brunswick. (They don't grow them big out there!) Yes, he was in Oka, went to St. Germain and set up an Army barricade to keep in those awful Mohawks. Then he ran over their Mohawk cemetery, without any regard to anybody. (We understand the false faces the Army stole from the Mohawks have been bringing them lots of trouble! They better give them back soon!)

He said he helped set up the razor wire to contain the Mohawk men, women and children in the concentration camp known as the Treatment Center. He was at the entrance of the Treatment Center with his buddy Steve Harvey (who refused to testify), doing guard duty around 8:30 am. Lasagna put his gun down and came from behind the razor wire out to the

Army side. He told Quivering Roy, "Come fight like a man." It was a reaction to something.

Quivering Roy (also known as *Shaking Knees* or is it *Dances With Knees*) told Lasagna he had no business on the Army side of the razor wire and to go back inside the compound. (Remember, this is 'all' Indian land, including where the soldiers were standing outside the compound where the Indians were being contained at gunpoint.)

Also, at this time the women of Kahnawake were in the midst of a pitch battle with the Army at the Longhouse. The Army had surrounded the Longhouse and were beaten back by the women.

Everybody was angry over this.

Quivering Roy said that Lasagna lectured him that he was too young to be there.

"I went around him in order to position myself between him and the entrance. When I told him he had no business on our side, he did not understand very well and I thought he would go back in." (A likely story. Roy and the others were out to get Lasagna).

Quivering Roy blocked his way. "Lasagna grabbed me and pushed me into the wire and went back in, saying to me, 'I will fucking kill you and bring me your best man and I will kill him too.'"

On September 6th, after this incident, the soldiers received orders that any of the Mohawks coming over to the military side were to be captured.

Briere played a video that showed Lasagna saying, "I'll kick the piss out of you." (while sticking his tongue out at Quivering Roy or something like that)

Julio Peris, lawyer for the defendants, asked Quivering Roy why he blocked the entrance if he expected Lasagna to go back into the compound.

"I was only blocking it a little bit!"

He added that Lasagna told him, "I will kick the piss out of you. I'll show you what a man is like. I will fucking kill you." These words were not on the tape.

Roy told Julio he had absolutely no doubt about Lasagna's threat. He watched this confrontation on television in a house on the reserve that he and his buddies were squatting in during the crisis.

He said he saw on TV the sign that was found on September 8th inside the concentration camp that read *Lasagne Your Dead Meat 2R22R*. For the most part, Quivering Roy tried not to remember too much.

Julio asked if the soldiers were ordered to put their bayonets on their guns around September 6th or 8th because there could be the danger of a riot, to disperse the crowd. The knife has a 6 in. blade and was supposed to scare the Indians. Quivering Roy said he was ordered to come out of his tent and fix bayonets one time. Lasagna was pulling the razor wire away using a four wheeler. There was a lot of yelling and screaming from the Indian side, but nothing from the military.

The questioning of Quivering *Shaking Knees* Roy continues ...

**Wednesday, December 11, 1991**  
**The Army Tries To Salvage Its Reputation**

MNNS - Owen Young and Julio Peris started out by declaring they no longer had mandates from the defendants to represent all three at the same time. Now Owen represents the two Lazores and Julio represents Cross. Judge Greenberg had started to restrict the cross-examination and objection business, and this was Owen's and Julio's way to get around it.

We heard more weepin' and moanin' from the Canadian Army soldier wimps. "Oh! Lord, dem Mohawks is bad!" What an Army! They aren't well trained (except to be stupid), they have no courage, and are a bunch of complainers. They have been ridiculed, insulted and humiliated by the warriors and now take their revenge by lying and crying in court against the warriors.

All these sob stories by the Canadian Army are pitiful and shameful. They know nothing, remember nothing, except what their coach tells them. Does an Army usually take out criminal charges against civilians whose security they are supposed to be maintaining?

The first witness was Dr. Franco Cavallo, a car coroner who did a post mortem on the red jeep that had allegedly been kidnapped by the warriors. He had examined the red jeep on September 13th. "Her tires had been perforated, and she was flat." He didn't have much to say. No photos taken by the Surete du Quebec were produced.

SQ Mario Lucifer of Delson was next. He had instructions to serve a subpoena on Dennis Nicholas on November 13, 1991, at 1010 Old Malone Road, #606

Kahnawake, 635-3975, to appear as a witness for the Crown. Lucifer phoned the number and was told that Dennis was at a religious retreat and could not be reached! Dennis's attorney is Corriveau.

Peacekeeper Craig *Pardon Me* (as the Judge called him) Standup was next. Standup had been given the subpoena to serve on Dennis. Standup called that number one time and was told by Dennis he would not go against his own people and would be in court on November 18th anyway, and on January 7, 1992 on a driving-while-drinking charge.

Standup said, "I don't know Dennis Nicholas, I don't know what he looks like, I can't find his house on Old Malone Highway, and he does not live in his post office box."

Judge Greenberg commented, "That evidence by the Peacekeeper leaves something to be desired."

Briere demanded (and got) a warrant for the arrest of Dennis Nicholas.

Judge Greenberg said, "And how do you propose to serve this on him? This fellow (the Peacekeeper) isn't going to be much help! Maybe you could catch him as he comes out of that religious retreat, or you could find out who he sleeps with!"

Greenberg called Dennis an "absconding witness, who knows full well that his presence is required here."

**Quivering Roy Returns**

Owen continued the cross-examination of Quivering Roy. He focussed on Roy's claim of Lasagna threatening to kill him. Such a threat could not be found on yesterday's video tape.

The tape showed Quivering Roy telling Lasagna, "Get on the other side. You can't come here."

Lasagna said to him, "Let's go for it. You are so fucking tough." On his way back into the compound gate, Lasagna pushed Quivering Roy into the razor wire.

On the tape Lasagna said, "I'll kick the piss out of you, boy. I'll show you what a man is like." According to Quivering Roy, the last words Lasagna said before he walked away were, "I'll fucking kill you. Bring me your best man and I'll fucking kill him too!"

Owen put on another tape from a different camera angle which showed Lasagna saying, "I'll kick the piss out of you, boy. I'll show you what a man is like." Lasagna then walked away.

This completely wiped out Quivering Roy's testimony. Roy's lower lip trembled, tears ran down his cheek. He almost fainted. His superior stood at the back of the courtroom watching his performance. Roy was under orders not to faint.

### Papparazzi Renaud

This guy's job was to go up into the 110 foot tower (one of three the Army had built) around compound TC to watch for Mohawk helicopters that might whisk away the warriors from the compound - a real Mohawk air lift.

"There were rumours that the warriors could escape by helicopters."

The tower had a blinding bright light which shone on the compound at night, playing Peeping Tom on the warriors and keeping watch for the arrival of Mohawk submarines.

The warriors had put up a huge white canvas in front of the concentration camp gate to prevent the Army from seeing what was going on there. So the army put up the towers to see over the canvas.

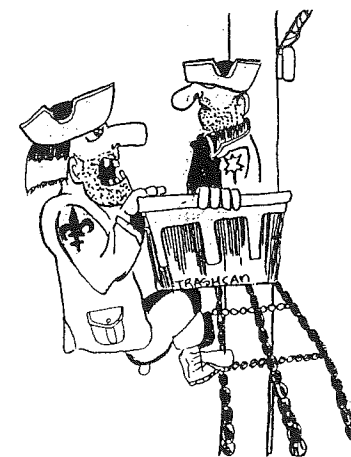
Military helicopters flew day and night over the

concentration camp. These giant metallic eagles hovered at 200 feet without mufflers, machine guns ready to fire on "les sauvages". The noise was nerve wracking. The helicopters also shone bright lights that lit up the ground and the Indians. (Some Indians got a nice tan from these lights!)

These young video watchers don't remember anything anymore unless it's on a video. Papparazzi Renaud was in Company A. They were there to make sure the roads weren't blocked. (Just traffic cops, so he said).

Papparazzi Renaud was sent up to the Tower of Babel on September 25th because the Army was up to something. His job was to photograph whatever happened in the concentration camp. He took pictures of Lasagna, and then said he took none of Lasagna because of the excitement ... and somehow the film got lost!

Papparazzi Renaud told Briere, "Between 4:00 and 5:00 we got to the top of the tower (the day before the Mohawks walked out of the Treatment Center on September 26th), where there was a camera to take pictures of the warriors down below. Our main job was to watch out for the Mohawk helicopters."



First one to spot a Mohawk chopper gets a case of Labatts.



Renaud's partner, Leclair, had binoculars. "We saw Lasagna looking at us through his binoculars. I didn't like this (It wasn't polite to stare). Lasagna took out his 44 revolver and made gestures to us. Then he started screaming at us (which they couldn't hear) and pointed at us with his 44. I put my camera down and went 10 feet down and pointed my machine gun at him. We insisted he put his weapon away (from 100 feet above?) And then he went back behind the canvas."

Leclair, Renaud's buddy, had described what Lasagna looked like from their high perch, "I could see his shape, but not too clearly."

That's Papparazzi Renaud's story! On his declaration he said it happened on September 21st or 22nd, but when he got together (accidentally, of course) recently in the cafeteria with his buddies Leclair and Leboyer, they corrected the date to September 25th.

### Danny Boy Royer

Danny Boy was in Company A, Platoon 3, under Major Levigne. He'll never forget September 25th, he said. He was like a cat on a hot tin roof.

Danny Boy said that a young warrior and Lasagna were talking together just behind the razor wire.

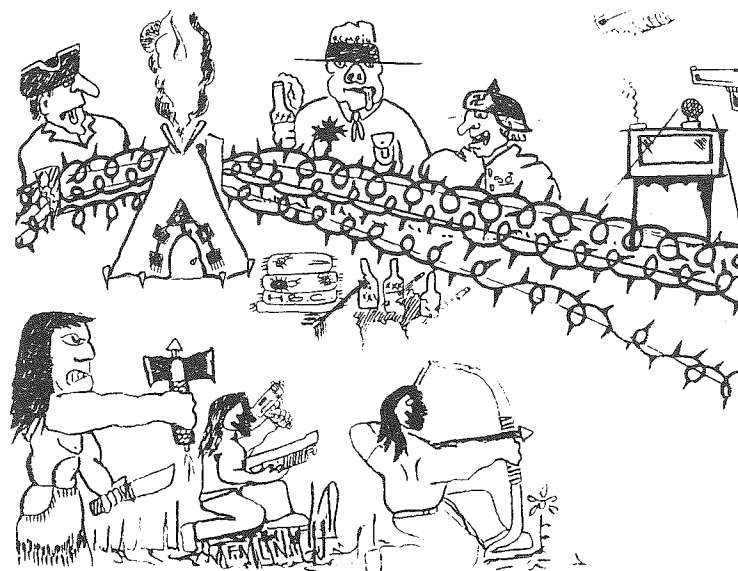
"Then he (Lasagna) started to insult us, and screaming at the ones in the tower saying, 'I'll show you how the military has no guts.' He took out his gun and pointed it toward the tower and said, 'There's one for you.' Shortly after that Lasagna left."

The soldiers of Company A hated their manhood and soldiering being questioned and attacked by the warriors. And the warriors' show of defiance and lack of fear unnerved them. This drove them so crazy that they had to be replaced

by Company C before they murdered those cocky mouthy warriors.

Danny Boy described the tower which lit up the whole of Concentration Camp TC, especially the air space. At night the lights swept over the whole area and one was kept on the canvas, "to look for Mohawk helicopters and escaping warriors, women and children." The tower lights were not powerful enough to shine directly into the windows. That was done by the helicopters that flew all night over the concentration camp.

The trial continues ...



Life goes on at the TC Concentration Camp.

## Thursday, December 12, 1991

### The Lying Continues

MNNS - Those army guys are duty bound and serious about their lying and story telling in the court. Lasagna and the warriors made jerks out of the soldiers, and they didn't like it. The soldier boys all said they had no reaction to this (which is unbelievable). And they're doubly insulted because Lasagna is bored and sits in the prisoner's dock sleeping through their testimony. Lasagna don't give them no respect - not even to watch or listen to them agonize as they lie to the jury.

### The Secret Witnesses

Briere decided not to bring them in because they are "untrustworthy witnesses". Scot Gabriel and Leroy Gabriel of Kanehsatake were so adverse when the "law" tried to subpoena them, "I feel they would even lie about their names."

### Mussolini Da Mariano

He was wearing a red banner across his chest to indicate that he fought in Oka, or is it a Christmas decoration! He is brusque, loud mouthed, authoritarian, kicking his heels together every so often - a thoroughly unlikable jerk! He reports to Major Levigne and Captain Rainville.

He is in Company A and arrived with his baggage on August 14th to fight at Oka. He ran the gauntlet of the KKK and SQ lines to get in. He too will never forget very specific details of September 25th 1990.

At O camp the soldiers were ordered, "If Indians point at us with their weapons, we point at them. If they lock or load, we lock and load. If they shoot us, we shoot them." (If they stick their tongue out at us, we give them the finger!)



Take your dirty hands off the DND property!

Mussolini was carrying out a recon on the razor wire on Rt. 344 that surrounded the infamous Compound TC.

"I had to protect the property of the Department of National Defence." The razor wire was government issue.

"Those (nasty) Indians were trying to dismantle or go through our razor wire. About 7 or 8 had put trees on the razor wire to create a bridge, and they screamed at us and pointed their weapons."

He said the war whoops surprised them, describing them as "undescribable".

"I talked to the Indians. They advanced, pushed the razor wire, and we went down the slope to tell them they had no right to touch the property of the Department of National Defence! I gave them two warnings but those hard-headed warriors wouldn't stop.

"William Sears arrived in front of me and asked for my name and rank which I did not give. He had the nerve to put down his weapon and invite me to fight with him. Sears said, 'Take off your gear and weapon, if you are a man, and come and fight with an unarmed warrior.'

"My response. I had some men advance on the line, take firing positions, cock their weapons and wait to see if Sears would get scared. Instead this made him more mad."

The warriors kept saying they were better trained by the U.S. Marines and had served time in action in an actual war. (No wonder those toy soldiers were terrified of fighting warriors one on one.)

Julio asked, "Did you reflect about his telling you he was not afraid of all this? Is this a strange reaction for people to be having in this situation?"

Mussolini Da Mariano said he had no reaction whatever. "I answer questions, I do not ask them."

The warriors were persistent.

"They put trees down on our razor wire!

"The Indians were agitated. They pointed their weapons at me and cocked them. Then Capt. Rainville intervened with a *strike force* and they lowered their weapons. Rainville ordered our men to fix their bayonets because those guys were throwing rocks and wood at us! I checked the razor wire and the Indians withdrew into the woods and left.

"One of the men was Lasagna. I knew the others by sight but not by name."

Mussolini Da Mariano referred to another occasion. He had gone to Lasagna and spoke with him about putting his revolver away.

"We had two machine guns pointed at him, on the Grizzly and from the tower. And we were all well armed, that's why we're called the Army."

This surprised Julio, "You knew Lasagna well enough to speak to him?"

"Of course! I spoke to him nicely the way I am speaking to you now. Lasagna put his weapon away and went back."

"What was your reaction when Lasagna said you're badly

trained, that they were tougher than you?"

"I took that as a threat to my men! Other Indians arrived and I had a few of my men advance."

"What about all these army weapons around, did it strike you this reaction of the warriors? You could blow up the whole Compound with your automatic weapons, mortar experts and so on. Did Ron Cross's and the warriors' reaction strike you that they were insulting you and they were telling you they were not afraid? Did you ever think about it?"

"No, it's not my job *to think*."

"Were you given information about your enemies. You knew they were Indians and that you were on their homeland?"

"No. We had watched the news. Of course we knew they were the Indians, but nothing about why we were there."

He was told what kinds of things to expect if there were confrontations. He went up to the wire and gave Sears and the others three warnings about not touching the razor wire which belongs to the National Defence.

He said he went by the book. (So why didn't he bring the office manual over to show the warriors, then they might have understood?)

He knew nothing about the attitudes of the enemies, about how they might react, and his superiors had not prepared him in anyway for what to expect (and besides he couldn't care less!).

### Warped Ruler, the Map Maker

This guy is the expert on the terrain, and maps out the ground for the movement of the Army into enemy territory. So he had a big important job. Right! He was everywhere with his flip chart and coloured markers, issued by the Department of Defence, making Xs everywhere he went.

Briere brought along more videos and a copy of TV Guide to follow what Warped Ruler was doing. The first video turned out to be an irrelevant flop.

The next video showed the Unknown Warrior scaring the shit out of R2-D2, a warrior shovelling, a blue circus tent and women telling the warriors to keep cool. One warrior said, "Someone give me permission to hit that guy", and another warrior ordered the soldiers to sling their guns.

Then Warped Ruler produced a Treasure Map showing the places he visited when he was in the Pines. It's completely wrong, putting roads, tents, farms, golf courses, cemeteries and Indians out of proportion and in the wrong places. The Canadian Army's in real trouble because either this guy suffers from dyslexia (seeing things back to forward and upside down) or he's a lousy artist and should be sent for an art course at the Ecole des Beaux-Arts!

This effort was to help the jury match the videos to the spots he pointed out on his map. It ended up confusing them more.

He did not rely on any aerial photos and did it all from his own memory. (And we know how poor that is! They can't even remember where they were, what they did and why!) He has not visited the site since the crisis.

The whole strategy of the Army was to scare the Indians! Ruler said the barricades were logs, a green car, fortified trenches, sand bags, the famous golf course, propane gas tanks, another trench. Their job was to sweep the woods clear of Indians.

Ruler said that when they came upon a dwelling, they went inside and cleared them out. They carried their loaded weapons at chest level. "With a minimum of force we asked them to withdraw." The individual soldier was allowed to shoot and then justify the consequences afterwards. He saw

two warriors arguing with Maj. Alain *Weird Al* Tremblay that gave him the willies!

The trial continues ...



## Friday, December 13, 1991 Weird Al Takes The Stand

MNNS - Today the Crown appealed the dropping of those two charges, counts 57 and 59, of obstructing the Canadian Army and the Surete du Quebec, and the general rioting charge. Why didn't they wait until the trial is over? Aren't they jumping the gun? They seem to be over reacting and want to make as much trouble for the Mohawk Nation as possible.

Also, it's becoming clearer every day that the Canadian Army is not a fighting army. It's a "P.R. army", run by a Madison Avenue advertising executive. The Canadian Army is primarily upset because the warriors ruined their reputation, kept saying they're better trained by the U.S. Marines and have actually seen action. No wonder these paper soldiers were terrified of the warriors' invitations to fight one on one.

Ivan Slowbug, a reporter for the CBC, and who was in the Pines on July 11th 1990 when the SQ para-military force came in and opened fire on the Mohawks, has been in court everyday monitoring the trials.

Today Harvey *Party Animal* Nicholas came in for sentencing. Crown Prosecutor Briere has painted Harvey as the *mastermind* and leading warrior in that confrontation. Harvey patted himself on the back when he heard that. His sentencing was postponed to January 16, 1992. Said Harvey, "I'm going to have a party, but I don't know what for!"

A young Indian child coughed in the court room and Judge Greenberg sent his gofor, Pa Kettle Paquette, to kick the child out of court. The Mohawk mom stared directly at Judge Greenberg and shook her head from side to side! (No way was she leaving!) Judge Greenberg backed off.

Later, a young man from Kanehsatake was sitting in the

court room and, while the jury was out, Judge Greenberg in a loud hysterical tone screamed, "I want that man with the camouflage pants and army boots out of my court room immediately!"

Owen jumped up and said, "It's the fashion. There are numerous Canadian Army soldiers sitting in this room with their uniforms and army boots on. I disagree with your decision."

Judge Greenberg shot back, "I am leaving my court room, and when I get back, I want that man out of here, or I'll have him thrown out (or I'll grab that Mohawk with my bare hands and knock the shit out of him, in front of the courtroom full of SQ and Army soldiers while he can't do anything about it!)." (Those videos of the Indian uprising at Oka are affecting the Judge. He's getting violent and more racist as the trial drags on.)

Owen Young and Julio Peris, lawyers for the three warriors, argued that the National Defence Act section 22 does not apply and have filed documents accordingly.

Briere was caught with his pants down again and, of course, Judge Greenberg lifted them for him.

The Patry red Willie jeep *Dear Heart* issue came up again. This jeep was supposed to have been ridden by Lasagna and someone else and damaged. It was found near the Lemay house in August 1990, and a month later in a shallow grave in a different location all smashed-up.

There are two sets of pictures of the jeep, one taken by her owner at one location in August, which were produced in court, and another set taken in September by the SQ, which were not produced by the Crown Prosecutor Briere. Briere was asked to produce the second set, which he said he never heard of, and then produced them one hour later!

In the first set of pictures, the jeep, "her tires were flat". In the second set of pictures "she was shot, and her tires were flat".

So dishonest Briere was caught again withholding evidence. This is another case of non or late disclosure. And the defence asked for relief, to either reopen the cross-examination of the witnesses, or to throw out the charges. Judge Greenberg's decision was to bring back all the witnesses because "it was a mistake, and Briere didn't mean to do it".

### Warped Ruler Continues

Ruler, the Map Maker, continued his testimony. He said that on September 1st Shellac had contact with a warrior who pointed a gun at him. Sgt. Paradise ordered him to take a firing position, "and the warrior ran off like a rabbit".

The platoon stood in a straight stretched out line toward the Pines. R2-D2 was on the ground in a firing position and was ordered by Sgt. Paradise to stand up. Then R2-D2 had a confrontation with a warrior while the Map Maker searched the bunker. "He wasn't in a dangerous position. No warriors' weapons were pointing at us." Lt. More-or-Less thought the men were being too aggressive, as the warriors all had their guns slung behind them pointing either up or down.

After this confrontation the soldiers began to put the razor wire in place. The Mohawk men, women and children were pushed into the Compound considered the "Mohawk area". Ruler's group had the most run-ins with the warriors, especially those implicating Ronald Cross - these were much discussed among his group.

Ruler said threats came from the Mohawks on a constant basis, letting the soldiers know that the Mohawks were not afraid.

"They were crazy. They did not seem to be afraid of us or anything. One even took Shellac's gun, put it into his mouth and said, 'Shoot me!'"

Julio said, "You knew full well you could have eliminated them? And you know they knew it also."

"Yes."

Owen asked Ruler about his map, "Your job is to make sure there are no surprises for the troops."

"When we arrived, it wasn't at all like what we were told. The mock-up (based on the aerial photos) showed cars forming a barricade, holes in the field which we thought were trenches, which turned out to be feeders for the cows. They told us they were fortifications. We did not know how many warriors there were. They wouldn't stand still long enough so we could photograph them.

Owen asked, "How did they respond to the army advance? Did you go in there with any expectation as to what you were looking for in terms of people and how they would fight back?"

"The Army was over-estimating. (Their intelligence was bad! Those Mohawks deliberately misinformed and misled them!) We were told they had an M60 and booby traps, which turned out to be fishing lines with hooks."

"You were worried about bombs blowing up the barricades. It turned out it was all bravado!"

"It was all talk." (He could not recall any estimates of the numbers of warriors they were given. The Army started to believe their own anti-Mohawk propaganda and became terrified of the Mohawks!)

"You thought there would be more Mohawks. You went in with tremendous backup, Grizzlies, machine guns, mortars, gizmos and whatnots on the lines at the back, which could fire into the area. It was quite visible to anybody that you were

advancing and the Army had tremendous fire power."

"Yes."

"And on the other side, when you had a chance to look at it, they had no such fire power at all, nowhere near equivalent at all in the bunkers or in the cow trenches. Once you got into the Pines, what you came across were individual men with personal weapons, and those men stood face to face with the soldiers time and time again."

"That is correct."

### Major Alain Weird Al Tremblay

He joined the Canadian Army in 1977 and became an officer in 1982. He was assigned Commander of Company C of the 2nd Battalion, Royal 22nd Regiment, which was called to intervene in Oka during the summer of 1990. He reported to Col. *Dangle* Daigle, the battalion commander, who reported to Big Five Star G. Armand Roy. There were five majors over each company – himself, Lavigne, Dione, Hints and somebody else. Weird Al Tremblay is a scrawny, rigid guy, called, in polite terms, a "constipated personality", who tightly purses his skinny lips when he's thinking (and when he's sitting on the toilet).

Weird Al said his company received orders to move to St. Benoit on August 14th 1990 at midnight - a total of 713 men and armaments. They stayed there until August 20th and then moved in to relieve the Surete du Quebec who were around Oka and Kanehsatake. Company C was deployed on the North end to replace SQ barricades at St. Germain and Annunciation roads, and to capture the first barricade occupied by the Mohawk warriors. Then the Canadian Army soldiers, fully armed, took on the job of directing traffic.

Company B and C on September 1st tightened the perimeter and captured the barricades on Rt. 344 and to the

east of St. Placide in the direction of Oka.

When the movie cameras were ready, it was lights, camera and action for director Weird Al Tremblay, who lead his troops into the Pines. Weird Al refused to go where there were no cameras. He wanted the journalists in front of him and the warriors behind them.

"We took the road that went Southeast in the direction of Center Road, Mongeon's farm, and we encountered the first barricade, which we captured. There were four warriors there, with two leaving quickly. Afterward we took the path that leads to the clearing in the Pines, where we were confronted with a second position, which we surrounded and captured. We encountered the cemetery, there was little resistance there, which we captured (Whew! what a fight!). We went to the club house, which we captured, and stayed there for the night (and had a few drinks)."

Some of the "obstacles" he described were trees laid down, sand piles, and cars reinforced by heavy cement blocks on the road.

"Platoon 9 was up ahead advancing up to the sand pile on Center Road. Our vehicles stopped, 30 men dismantled and took away the car that was in front of us. I (risking my life) went ahead. Then we had some arguments with some warriors who were at that position. We told them we were going ahead with the advance. We captured this position, and established a safety perimeter around that obstacle using engineering elements to destroy the sand piles (we blew them up)."

We were treated to more videos. We saw Weird Al (spitting out bullets, eating barbed wire, swinging from trees, running) behind the green car, facing one of the warriors whom he said were Leroy Gabriel and Cataford. There were snipers beside him with their guns ready to shoot. They are

qualified as snipers with special training. He was yelling and screaming hysterically for everybody to stay calm. He has his own montage of the best scenes in his den at home.

Weird Al continued explaining the scenes on this video, "After taking control of the first barricade, we progressed on the road going south. Then my troops carefully dismounted their armoured vehicles. Then we ran into some chopped down trees. We shovelled the sand piles.

"The warriors withdrew from our advance, seeing our bravery. We removed more chopped down trees and then our armoured vehicles went onto the golf course, which we captured.

"Then we pushed on the road and came upon a network of trenches along the golf course in the direction of the club house. We sent men to inspect this.

"We progressed to the clearing in the Pines, east of Oka Gardens. We had to pause considering the danger, the confrontations and pressures at the time. There was an increase in the number of warriors facing us. Negotiations took place.

"When the opportunity was available, we continued pushing forward to the clearing, which we captured."

On the video we saw the warrior flag being carried by a warrior with a blue baseball cap, Weird Al Tremblay approaching with his tons of armaments, the sound of war whoops, a warrior he cannot identify, another called Black Jack, and beside him Sgt. Joe Blow.

Weird Al said they wanted to use the minimum violence possible, and did not want to provoke an incident that would end up in a shoot out. (But they did shoot at the TC building early one morning!)

He recognized Mr. Skidders known as Mad Jap and, of course, Lasagna.

Weird Al knew about the incident in which Quivering Roy and Lasagna shoved each other around in front of the razor wire that was in front of Compound TC. New orders were issued. Afterwards, anyone coming out would be placed under arrest (without specifying what they would be charged with). He did not consider this event worth writing a report about.

Weird Al said that when the Concentration Camp was set up, there were 12 journalists, over 6 children, 12 women and over 20 men kept behind the heavily guarded razor wire.

Owen commented that with the orders to point when pointed at, cock when they cock and shoot when shot at, "the army was counting very much on the Mohawks having similar orders. As you advanced toward Concentration Camp TC, no shot was fired by the Canadian Forces soldiers, and throughout the many confrontations, personal and general, not one shot was fired by a Mohawk warrior."

Weird Al Tremblay admitted that no warriors fired shots and one shot was fired by a soldier, but not in his sector. "Our men were in a position of alertness throughout." However, he said he had seen videos of warriors in a firing position.

The trial continues with legal arguments next week on sovereignty, treaties, National Defence Act, and so on.



## Monday, December 16, 1991 Eight More Charges Dropped

MNNS - The political "pow wow" trial arising out of the Mohawk War at Oka during the summer of 1990 in Quebec Superior Court of freedom fighters Ron Lasagna Cross, Gordon Noriega Lazore, and Roger 20-20 Lazore continued. It will adjourn this week with legal arguments about the National Defence Act and other issues, and start up again on January 6th 1992.

Everybody was set to start another day of trials and tribulations when Crown Prosecutor Francois Briere with two fingers waving in the air jumped up expressing a need to take a quick dash to the bathroom. He said, "I'm dancing more today than I was on Friday." Julio Peris, lawyer for defendant Ronald Cross, said, "I object." But once again the Judge came to Briere's rescue and let him go.

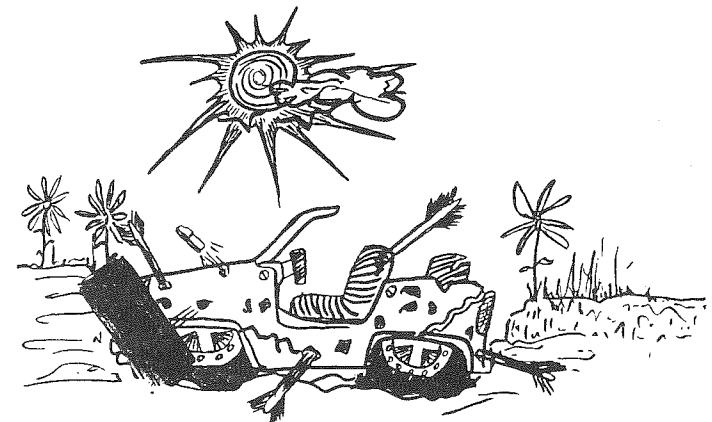
Last Friday, everybody was mad. It all started when a young Mohawk warrior from Kanehsatake came into the courtroom in his battle fatigues. The Judge said he's seen enough camo on the videos to last him a lifetime, and was worried that the three jurors staring at the warrior might be frightened.

The Crown wanted Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs, a Mohawk from Kanehsatake who testified against the three warriors, to come back to testify again. Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs said he saw flat tires and bullet holes on the red jeep the day after the junking of Lemay's house.

Owen did not want to call Jacobs back, "He's been discredited so much, it's like putting another nail in his coffin." The Judge agreed.

Referring to Mr. Patry's red Willie jeep, there are two sets

of photos taken of *Dear Heart* at different times. Fernand Mercier, SQ photographer, produced the ones that were taken on September 13, 1990, which showed she was shot, stripped right down, and her bra was gone! (No wonder it brought tears to Patry's eyes!) There was even black tape over the headlights to censor her identity. He gave her a four hour photo session, consisting of close-up head shots and full length shots. (These photos almost made the Centerfold of Popular Mechanics.) And Briere tried to hide all these photos from the defence.



Dear Heart laid to rest.

Mercier took the pictures of *Dear Heart* at the Patry Petro Can garage in Oka, in the presence of "Carnecologist" Dr. Cavallo, who did a thorough examination.

Mercier said he gave his photos of her to Dr. Cavallo and Colin Desrochers of SQ Ballistics. He kept no records, did not know who else he gave them to, and did not know what happened to them afterwards.

Car towing expert, Daniel Forebear, was late for court because he couldn't get his car started and then couldn't find a parking spot.

Forebear's on Unemployment Insurance and did only "one" job for Bernard Patry, to tow Dear Heart to the Petro Can station. He said, "I last saw her when I picked her up during the crisis (on September 12, 1990)."

She was parked on the Mary Chipman property, near the village close to the main barricade. "I went on Route 344 with an SQ escort. (This is while the Mohawks were still in Concentration Camp TC.) She had flat tires."

Back to Fernand Mercier, SQ photographer.

Mercier was shown both sets of pictures. Looking at the first set taken in August, he said, "She looks pretty good here. Her tires are flat, that is about all."

He said they looked flat but they could be hidden by the grass on an uneven surface, so you could not really tell. He ended up admitting you could not really tell if the tires were flat or not. So maybe they weren't flat at all!

Weird Al Tremblay was back and he did not say much. He likes playing war games and being photographed. The only time he moved into Sector 5 was when the journalists came in.

One observer said, "He's got a lot of grey hair since last year during the crisis."

He sure has aged. Some believe he's actually a woman trapped in a man's body, trying to get out and jump into the prisoner's dock with the warriors to have some fun.

We watched another video, this time with the benefit of Weird Al's commentary. He informed us that the *alert position* and *firing position* are the same thing. The only difference is the way the warriors and soldiers were holding their guns.

Weird Al tried to show that the warriors did the same as the army snipers (which is pretty far-fetched). He wasn't

successful in this attempt.

Eight charges were thrown out today - numbers 1, 33, 35, 42, 44, 45, 58 and 56. His Honour ruled there was a lack of evidence to support the charges. They mostly had to do with vehicle and tractor mischief, and assault charges against the soldiers of which there was no evidence.

The interpreter read out a Christmas card that Judge Greenberg received from a fan of the three warriors. The supporter asked that a special chance be given to Ron Cross because he is a role model, and recently got married. He and the other warriors deserve a chance. They have already become fine examples for their people.

**Wednesday, December 18, 1991**  
**Army Offences Dropped For The Lazores**

MNNS - Today it was court as usual. Crown Prosecutor Briere sat there quiet, a pitiful sight having finally landed and returned to earth. Then in walked some help for him in the form of *Dragon Lady*, the lady Crown who is going to argue for him on the constitutional issues, such as the National Defence Act. Today, SQ Inspector *AT & T* wasn't sitting beside Briere. (He's the big SQ goof who used the telephone book technique to beat up some of the warriors when they were in jail. This method prevents outward bruises showing but creates extensive internal injuries.)

The witnesses who never showed up for Crown Prosecutor Briere were Ronald Bonspille, Corey Jacobs, Dennis Nicholas, Scot Gabriel and Leroy Gabriel. Ron Cross once went on a binge and didn't turn up for court. (He told the court he didn't know anybody at that party, didn't know where it was - he just went this way, turned left, and then right and so on.)

Briere is not equal to the task. He messed up, and knows it. But the Judge is always helping him, "He's not really a liar, and he isn't that incompetent. It just seems that way."

Today Crown Prosecutor Francois Briere quietly asked for amendments to 18 charges, to throw out eight other charges because he has no evidence, and to close his case.

Briere had not prepared his case properly. The 18 charges had to be amended by adding the words "a weapon or an imaginary weapon" (to counts # 2, 5, 6, 10, 11, 13, 18, 27, 28, 38, 40, 43, 46, 48, 51, 52, 53, 55). In other words, did the warrior with the fake nose and glasses carry a water pistol when he scared the Canadian Army? What about that "click"

that Francis Jacobs heard in the middle of the August 31st Friday night fight - was that real or imagined? Jacobs said that the noise stopped long enough for him to hear the click. (Sure, sure!)

Judge Greenberg said that defence lawyers, Owen Young and Julio Peris, could call back 15 or more witnesses starting with the Mohawk witnesses from Kanehsatake and all the soldiers, and ask them a question or two.

This means that each of these witnesses can be called back by the defence to be asked, "Was that a real or a fake weapon?" If they all say, "I don't know and I don't care", it will not make any difference to anyone. So Owen and Julio decided not to call any of them back.

The effect of all this is that there are now no army offences against Roger and Gordon Lazore. Ron Cross is left with six charges pertaining to the soldiers (R2-D2, Joe Blow, Shellac, Doggone, Roy and Renaud).

Count #56 involving the possession of a weapon or an imaginary weapon between September 2nd to 27th has been withdrawn for all three warriors.

Count #32, the ambulance charge, has been amended as belonging to Joliette Chevrolet instead of Ronnie Bonspille. Counts #39 and #40 were amended to correct the spelling of Sgt. Joe Blow's name to John Doe.

Eight counts were thrown out for lack of evidence - #1 aggravated assault against Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne, #33 vehicle mischief, #35 tractor mischief, #42 assault against Shellac, #44 uttering a death threat at Alain *Weird Al* Tremblay, #45 assault, and #56 carrying a dangerous weapon.

Proof is weakest against Roger 20-20 Lazore.

With the Crown's case being so weak, the defence may not be calling a defence for the first 36 counts.

Owen and Julio are now requesting two separate trials -

one for the first 36 charges which look weak for the Crown, and one for Ron on the six army offences.

Will the Crown throw out the first 36 charges or call for a mistrial, and go ahead with the army charges against Ron Cross? We'll find out tomorrow.

If this defence is split, then the jury can be addressed on January 7th 1992 on either the 36 counts or the army charges against Ron Cross.

*Side Note:* When the Canadian Army was sent to Kuwait, the government sent them condoms to put on the gun barrels to keep the sand out. The Canadian Army learned this trick from the warriors.

### Three Warriors' Special Christmas Gift List

Our three warriors said they are giving to the following people:

Weird Al Tremblay – a windup soldier to keep himself company

Clown Briere – a pair of camo pants and a condom to wear every time the soldiers come on the videos (to keep himself clean)

Judge Greenberg – a young lady to coo and pay him some compliments

Gerry John Candy Etienne – a diet pizza

Grand KKKlan Chief George Martin – a tutor, and a microwave oven to plug into his car battery to heat up his pizza

Francis Cry Baby Jacobs – a box of Kleenex and a pacifier

R2-D2 Cloutier – diapers

Mussolini Da Mariano – a toy train set

Dennis Nicholas – the “big picture”, and after he comes out of the religious retreat, sainthood

Mulroney – Books *People of the Pines* and *War at Home*

Bourassa – Videos *Okanada* and *Hannibal the Cannibal*

Ryan (Quebec Public Security Minister) – a guided tour of the four Kahnawake checkpoints

Ciaccia (negotiator for the Quebec government) – a one-way pass out!

One more day until the court breaks for the holiday. We wish Owen Young and Julio Peris a decent holiday!



## Friday, December 20, 1991 Court Goes Into A Tailspin

MNNS - The political pow wow trial will adjourn today until December 30, 1991 in order to hear a decision on some complex arguments on how the case should be split. It will start up again on January 6, 1992.

To the tune of "Let's twist again like we did last summer", Owen Young and Julio Peris presented and argued motions to sever the counts into two blocks (civil and military offences), throwing the Judge and Crown into turmoil.

Crown Prosecutor Francois Briere must have gotten his arguments off a Cornflakes box (corny!). He will do anything to get Lasagna in the witness box to testify, so he can question him. But you can't get Lasagna or any accused in the box to incriminate himself. If a person is charged, he has a right to remain silent. If he wants to give evidence on one thing, you can't make him give evidence against himself on something else.

Briere threw so many charges at Lasagna that it undermines Lasagna's right to defend himself properly. Judge Greenberg is afraid that this case will be appealed, which will make him look like a bad housekeeper.

When there is a split of the counts. Usually the Crown can choose which counts they will prosecute. Briere wants to continue with the military counts against Ron Cross (we know how Briere feels about the soldiers!), in which the Lazores are not charged, and declare a mistrial on the other counts. This could mean that the past three and a half months in court were useless.

It also means a new trial on the military counts for Ron Cross, and the Canadian Army will have to eat more crow. The soldiers will have to be called back from Alberta, the

United States and Kuwait to testify again. Shouldn't the Army be out fighting somewhere, instead of hanging around in the court?

This is how legal issues versus factual issues can affect the real issue, which Mohawks believe is protection of their territory.

Dragon Lady Crown tried, what she thought was a clever maneuver, to make the Judge decide the legal question of whether the Mohawks can bring up jurisdictional defence, whether the National Defence Act was constitutional, and the effect of the treaties in relation to the actions of the Mohawks during the crisis. Dragon Lady said a guy from National Defence named Roulette Caron was standing by to talk on this.

The Crown is worried that Owen and Julio might bring the facts of these issues in front of the jury and win. So they're trying to keep it away from the jury and keep it in front of the Judge.

Owen and Julio did not give Judge Greenberg an easy, neat and tidy way out of this, so he can protect his little puppet, Briere. The Judge and Crown have been thrown to the (reserve) dogs. (Bet they haven't seen a good dog fight in a long time!)

What more can we say, "It's a wrap!" The first charge of kidnapping (you'd need a tow truck to do it!) of Gerry Etienne was thrown out by the Crown. Ron Cross was kept in jail for 7 months for this, and now the Crown throws it out because they have no evidence! (There oughtta be a law against something like this!)

The Attorney General of Quebec signed this indictment for 59 charges against these three guys at the request of the Crown Prosecutor, and now it turns out there was never any

evidence to prove many of these counts.

### The Under(lying) Theory of the Case

At least the defence got a dry run of what is the underlying theory of the case, which is, "Let's get Lasagna!"

The Crown's theory in the incident with the alleged beating of Francis Cry Baby Jacobs on August 31, 1990, is that the three warriors were dressed alike in camo. Because they were dressed alike they were all part of the offence! This means that if one of the Radio City Music Hall Rockettes kicks you while dancing on stage, all 250 Rockettes are guilty because they were all dressed the same.

Joey Day of Kanehsatake got five years for threatening Grand KKKlan Chief George Martin (who shouldn't have been born. This is one time you wish birth control could be retroactive). Joey has appealed this sentence and is returning to St. Jerome court on January 30, 1992.

Scot Gabriel pleaded guilty to being hit by a car driven by Gerry John Candy Etienne, who turned off his lights as he drove through the warrior barricades in Kanehsatake on August 1, 1990, so as not to shine it into the warriors' eyes.

While the Crown and Judge were out researching the law and trying to figure out what they were doing, the underground film *Okanada*, which heavily favours the Mohawks, was shown on the court room monitor. The SQ, Army, court workers and everybody else who could get into the court room watched it, spellbound. (Maybe there is a Santa!)

This is an important case. Now the Mohawk Nation has all the notes, poking fun at everybody because that is the way Indian people deal with serious matters. Mohawks have to keep a sense of humour, as it will bring a balanced perspective to what is happening to us. Let us hope that we never lose our tongue-in-cheek perspective.

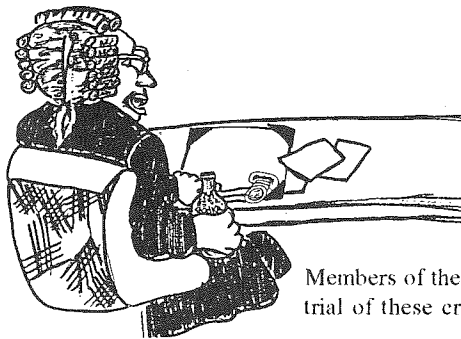
Why did the SQ, Army and court personnel watch *Okanada* so mesmerised? A good question. The Mohawks laughed at the height of the life and death struggle, because in our culture that is what we do when something serious is happening to us. But in the white man's culture, everything is serious, even if it's not serious.

Our lawyers, Owen Young and Julio Peris, the hard working mainstays of this case, have gone for a short holiday.

## Monday, December 30, 1991 Judge Refuses To Split Trial

MNNS - The trial is coming to a close. It adjourned to January 7, 1992.

Today, we had two hours of mental masturbation by Judge Greenberg! He read book after book ad nauseum and each case he read said the same thing, or referred to each other's cases as a reference. (You know how it is!) It took him a while, but he finally got it off in front of a large number of Mohawk supporters who attended court to hear what they thought might be a decent decision.



Members of the jury, I have decided not to split the trial of these criminals and terrorists.

One Kanehsatake woman commented, "That Judge has as much class as my cat hovering over the cat litter!"

The issue is: Ron Cross wishes to remain silent on the first 36 civil charges, not to testify and not to call witnesses.

However, on the second group of charges, he could testify and call witnesses. But, if the trial is not split and he testifies, then he could be questioned on the first group of counts. And if he testifies, he could be called to testify in other trials against other Mohawks.

The Judge talked about the Charter of Rights, the complexity of the case for the jury because of how the Crown

had overloaded the accused with indictments. Why doesn't the Judge just use his common sense? He can't because he has to uphold the white man's system, and at the same time deny the accused, a Mohawk Nation citizen, the right to a fair trial.

What it boils down to is the Judge once again came to the aid of his Crown Prosecutor, Blundering Briere. The Judge refused to split the trial into civil and military charges. So the trial will go to the jury on Tuesday, January 7, 1992, who will then make a decision on whether the three warriors are guilty or not guilty of the 49 remaining charges.

All three accused stood mute because they did not plead "guilty" or "not guilty" to the charges. They continue so far to stand mute because they have made no defence.

The Crown's case against the accused is very weak. If Ron Cross makes a defence, and witnesses are brought in, he could be found guilty because he crossed over the line and accepted the jurisdiction of the court.

The whole Mohawk crisis was political, not criminal. And the Crown's proof does not look bad for Ron Cross. In fact, it's a piece of dung! There is virtually no evidence against Roger and Gordon.

Once again the Judge's decision proves that for the Red Man there is no justice in the white man's court. Judge Greenberg said, "Our laws are the supreme law of the land." (What about the laws that were here for thousands of years before the white man invaded North America?)

The three accused may not put in a defence because it won't make any difference. If Ron Cross and others go to jail for defending the land, then that is the price that all Indian people must pay for doing this. It is the spirit of Lasagna, Noriega, 20-20 and others like them that the system wants to break. The system has beaten and tried to kill them, but our

warriors still did what they did - defended the land. And their spirit is strong. That is important.

It does not matter what the white man does to us, whether we get off or not, are found guilty or not. Because we did the right thing! If Lasagna is convicted, it proves even more that the Red Man cannot get justice in the Red Man's land, that the Red Man will be punished for carrying out his natural duty.

Judge Greenberg personifies the Canadian judicial system (part of the organization of power controlled by a few white supremacists) and it is good that he is the Judge, because it reminds us once again what we are up against.

The three warriors are Revolutionaries. They are changers, and they personify the strong spirit of the Mohawk people. That is what the mainstream system wants to destroy. We have no choice but to keep saying, "Get off our land!"

## January 7 & 8, 1992 Any One See Lasagna?

MNNS - On Tuesday, January 7th Lasagna arrived one hour late because he had a flat tire. Then Judge Greenberg informed the jury that more charges had been dropped. As well, Owen Young and Julio Peris had sent the Judge a fax outlining why they were not putting in a defence. Because the Judge had not severed the counts into civil and military charges, he had effectively "tied and gagged" Ron Cross, who now cannot defend himself. This fax could have been kept out of the case file, but Judge Greenberg with his overgrown ego mentioned it in court. So the fax had to be filed as an exhibit. This can only help the accused. Copies of the fax then had to be distributed to the jury.

Crown Prosecutor Francois Briere is highly insulted because the accused are not putting in a defence. If the three warriors are acquitted without a defence, it would be the biggest insult to the judicial system. It is also the biggest statement that could be made by the Mohawk Nation - that they did nothing wrong, that it was *political* not *criminal*.

*LaPresse* ran a front page story of our three warriors not putting in a defence of their actions. Judge Greenberg said, however, "The accused still has a right to testify or call in witnesses." (They can still put their foot in their mouths!) It is a political matter and the accused will not answer on the criminal charges.

On Wednesday, January 8th the courtroom was full of reporters to report on the summations by Crown Briere, Owen Young and Julio Peris to the jury. The jury then decides whether our warriors are guilty or not.

Ron Cross did not show up. No reasons were given. Judge Greenberg issued a warrant for his arrest and the case



will proceed with the pleadings on Thursday, January 9th if Ron is there.

Owen Young and Julio Peris have done an outstanding job defending our Mohawk Nation citizens.

Lasagna was found last night in Ville LaSalle and arrested. It looks like he'll be in court on Thursday, January 9th whether he wants to or not. We'll have to see if he was beaten up again by the Surete du Quebec!

## Thursday, January 9, 1992 Crown Briere Addresses The Jury

MNNS - Yesterday Kahnawake was surrounded by SQ looking for Lasagna, who did not show up in court that day. It now appears they knew where he was and were following him around for at least four hours before they picked him up. So Wayward Lasagna is back, and he looks tired.

Julio Peris, Lasagna's lawyer, asked that the handcuffs and two police officers on each side of him in the prisoner's box be removed, so as not to prejudice him before the jury. Briere insisted that the policemen remain to keep Lasagna from talking to his two co-accused (and buddies), Roger and Gordon.

The Judge ordered the handcuffs and policemen removed, and that Roger and Gordon be searched each and every time they go in and out of the court room (which the SQ have been doing anyhow, and we thought the Judge had ordered this procedure).

Briere's summation was worse than his evidence.

"Your duty is to society as a whole. Each society is ruled by laws to protect life and liberty, which are entrenched in the Canadian and Quebec Charter of rights...blah...blah...blah! Blah...blah...blah!

"Without laws there would be no organized society (corruption) and chaos would reign (like it does in Quebec). There were 30 (lying) witnesses - civilians and soldiers who were in Oka because of disturbances. The charges consist of six different incidents."

Briere then went on to give all kinds of excuses about the lies his witnesses told.

"Anyone can lie. What is important is whether the witness

(at least) *tried* to tell the truth!

"He could have told the truth about some things, but he can't lie about everything! The witness that wishes to tell the truth may be wrong. We have all been wrong! It's a fact of life.

"You have to Judge how the witness felt during his testimony (was he coached well enough by the Crown?). You can believe part of what he said, and not the other part (which part!). Did he contradict himself? (His witnesses contradicted themselves and each other). Did he refuse to admit his contradiction? (You bet they did). When he got caught lying, what did he do? (No one will admit a lie. Like Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs said when he got caught lying, 'I don't know how it became untrue!')

"Maybe he lied on small matters and not on the big matters.

"The better educated can lie better than the less educated. (Major Weird Al Tremblay can lie easier than the privates.)

"It could be because they were nervous, or lost their memory (or were threatened with charges by the SQ if they did not testify).

"There may be some things you remember easier than other things."

#### Martin, Diabo and Etienne

The contradictory testimonies of Kanehsatake's Grand KKKlan Chief George Martin, Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne and Evelyn *Roseanne Barr* Diabo had contradictory dates (because their minds were traumatized by the worry of losing their pizza to the warriors). They even hit and ran Scot Gabriel at the warrior checkpoint at Kanehsatake.

Then the three were visited by warriors Daniel Nicholas, Ron Cross and two others. (Remember, it was Martin and

Etienne who called in the warriors to Kanehsatake, and when the going got rough, they wanted to get out, but not run away. So they made up the story that they were kicked out.)

Briere, whose voice is high, squeaky and slightly effeminate, tried to do an imitation of the rough voices of Daniel Nicholas and Ron Cross saying, "Butch, get your fat h'ass h'out 'ere." It was a scream ... "You too, George!" Martin and Etienne left that night (although the warriors would have been glad to escort them out).

Briere said, "Imagine forcing them to resign as chiefs?" (Just because they ran down a warrior!)

#### Lemay and Patry

Briere went on and on about the souped up evidence on the Lemay house trashing and the damage to Patry's red Willie jeep.

"Francis Jacobs described himself as a member of the house (rat) patrol of Mohawk citizens in the occupied territory. (It was a foreign occupation of Mohawk Territory.)

"Joe David, a warrior, asked Francis Jacobs to take care of a Pioneer sound system for him. Francis Jacobs goes to the Lemay house and sees Cross and others coming out of the house through a kitchen window (right by the door). Cross says, 'We're just partying. We've been in the bush for five weeks.' Jacobs could smell booze and women on him. Gordon Lazore said, 'Get the hell out of here' (another bad imitation) to Francis Jacobs.

"Then Francis Jacobs went to another house to feed the chickens and heard 40 shots. The next morning Francis Jacobs goes to the Lemay house again and he saw the red jeep and bumps into Mr. Lemay, who was taking pictures.

"Lemay had received a call that his house had been damaged. And Patry last saw his red Willie jeep on television

with three warriors sitting in her."

### The Mo-John Incident

Doc Mo-John met Roger Lazore one month after he let some warriors stay in his stable under the command of a warrior called *Major*.

"Once Major disappeared trouble started. Dr. Mongeon met Roger Lazore in the stable where there was a party in progress, with girls and booze! On August 27th Roger went to see Dr. Mongeon to tell him the end was near.

"The Mongeons were under pressure, with the warriors on one side of their house and the Army on the other side, looking at each other through his windows. Roger tells him they were to be attacked and needed the truck to carry the wounded. Dr. Mongeon had no choice but to give them his truck.

"Francis Jacobs visits Mongeon's house. Roger says, 'Don't worry.' Jacobs enters the house. He sees Gordon Lazore at the kitchen table with booze and with a rifle by him (and girls giggling in the other room). Gordon says, 'Get the hell out of here.' (Gordon's always saying that). So Francis Jacobs gets out of there.

"Dr. Mongeon goes back to his house on August 31st and sees Roger trying to cut the grass around the broken furniture strewn about the lawn. Roger says, 'We're cleaning it up.' Dr. Mongeon said that if he had a rifle he would have used it. In the meantime, Gordon is standing by the truck with tools taken from the stable - gas cans, saws and other things, which are not tools for surgery on the wounded."

### The Big Fight

Briere described the Friday Night Fight at the Crossroads

on Rt. 344.

"A truck arrives driven by Angus Nelson. Ron Cross gets out and says, 'We're gonna fix you.' Francis Jacobs and his car get roughed up. Roger did nothing at the crossroads because he wasn't there.

"They called Jacobs and his gang traitors because they called in the media and the Army, and were helping the SQ. (Like Gordon would have said, 'Get the hell out of here.')

"Cross and company then went to Ronnie Bonspille's place. Robert Bonspiel, Ronnie's son, said he saw Ron Cross smashing the ambulance windows with the butt of an AK47, and slashing tires. He saw a Voyageur Blue Van.

"The van wasn't there when the photos were taken." (This may remain a mystery of life to assert the credibility of Robert Bonspiel.)

### The Canadian Armed Forces

Briere started making excuses for the soldiers lying.

"When they were called in they were peace officers. Did they have any personal grievance toward Ron Cross? Did they pinpoint him. (They sure did!) Did the media pick on him?

"Cloutier (R2-D2) said he had exactly the same confrontation off camera with Lasagna, bullet and all."

There were many media myths about the Oka Crisis, and particularly about Lasagna. Briere was trying to discredit the press. He infers they made up the story that the face to face warrior with R2-D2 was Lasagna, but at the same time is trying to claim that Lasagna had a face-off with R2-D2 off camera.

Briere knows his case is not good. He is trying to get pity for the terrified, cowardly, badly trained young Canadian soldiers who were being yelled and screamed at, yet who had

all that fire power on their side.

"Those big bad warriors were picking on the young soldiers who have less life experience, even Baby Warrior was getting them so mad."

Soldiers Roy and Harvey were on duty outside Concentration Camp TC when Ron Cross laid down his rifle and crossed over the razor wire. Roy told Ron Cross he was on the military side and had to go back.

Briere said that Ron Cross saying to Roy "I will kick the piss out of you" is the same as saying "I will fucking kill you!" And just because it wasn't filmed and there are no witnesses doesn't mean it did not happen.

On the day before the people left TC, Royer, Renaud and Mussolini da Mariano were up the tower watching out for the Mohawk Air Force and taking pictures of warriors.

Briere found that when his witnesses had their memories refreshed, they found out they were wrong. "You have to assess the credibility of the facts based on different versions." (brilliant)

Briere developed his case on declarations which his witnesses had signed but not read. Under testimony the witness later said that the declarations were not accurate.

"The SQ officers had trouble understanding what they meant. It was a communications breakdown. The police officers did not speak enough English, so Robert Bonspiel even gave his statement in French. But he was in a hurry to get out of Kanehsatake and did not read his statement.

"No one is compelled to give a statement to the police (unless they have something on you and want you to testify for them, or else!).

"The Law treats all witnesses fairly (even the liars). Without witnesses there is no justice. No justice system could function without them."

Briere's insincerity is gooey and sickening.

### AT & T Fortin, SQ Goon

AT&T gave evidence on how Lasagna was captured in LaSalle the night he did not appear in court. AT&T used back up forces. They had Lasagna under surveillance the whole night. And the press had the police and Lasagna under surveillance the whole night too.

The police surrounded a private home and Lasagna came out without resistance to be arrested at 4:00 Friday morning, January 10th.

Lasagna shrugged, "I broke under pressure."

There is also the question of the \$50,000 bail. The Crown asked for a ban on publication of the details.



**Friday, January 10, 1992**  
**Julio And Owen Address The Jury**

MNNS - Failure to secure a conviction of the three accused, particularly Lasagna, would be a public relations disaster for Canada, Quebec, the Canadian Army and Surete du Quebec. It would raise again questions about Prime Minister Mulroney's and Premier Bourassa's decision to order a para-military and military invasion of Kanehsatake/Oka and Kahnawake.

The botched raid on the Pines by the para-military SQ forces cost the life of one SQ officer, and the Canadian Army occupation of Mohawk Territories at Kanehsatake and Kahnawake brought angry denunciations from Canadians and people all over the world. It also cost the Canadian taxpayer hundreds of millions of dollars.

It is not likely that Canada/Quebec's justice system will allow anyone to go free.

Indeed, when Owen and Julio presented their well-prepared defence summaries on behalf of the political warriors, the Crown and the Judge showed little sympathy for the defence arguments. Remember that the Crown has the resources of the entire Canadian and Quebec governments behind it, much of the evidence was not disclosed deliberately, and some of it was disclosed at the last moment, which constitutes deliberate withholding of evidence by the Crown.

Several times, Crown Prosecutor Briere complained he did not have time to provide this evidence to the defence even though he had a huge team of helpers who should have been able to provide sufficient materials for an adequate defence.

Non-disclosure, last minute revelations by the Crown, secret witnesses, and not calling in witnesses who had been scheduled to testify, could undermine the defence's case in the

on-going battle by the justice system to convict these Mohawk men.

The evidence that was revealed was so weak the Crown abandoned efforts to prove ten of its original charges against the three warriors. The alleged wounding of Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne, which the Crown used to keep Lasagna in jail for seven months, and the obstruction and rioting charges from September 6th to 26th 1990, which were major serious charges, were thrown out by the Crown.

Thus, notwithstanding the weak evidence, which punched gaping holes in the prosecutor's case against the three warriors, an acquittal for at least one of them is not assured. Indeed it is very clear that the increasingly unstable Mulroney and Bourassa governments cannot afford to have their "Oka invasion" scenario questioned. Thus, its case depends on neither the credibility of its witnesses, who were all torn apart by Julio and Owen, nor of its evidence, which was dung. "It's the big picture" that counts. Someone has to go to jail for this!

Summation by Julio Peris, Lawyer for Ron Cross

"When a juror is sworn in they have the power of a Judge, to listen to the evidence and decide unanimously if someone is guilty or not.

"The three accused did not plead and did not defend their actions. But silence can sometimes communicate effectively. The three say they are innocent and it is up to the state to prove beyond a reasonable doubt that they are guilty. In other words, *no one has to prove his innocence*. When you prove it, you can then condemn them!

"'Reasonable doubt' means that you are morally certain one is guilty. The evidence has to be presented fairly and dispassionately by the state. When the truth is known, the

right person is convicted and suffers.

"The Crown cannot aim all over the place to find some evidence. Photos, declarations and incomplete proof harm an accused. You should consider why Corey Jacobs, Scot Gabriel and Ron Bonspille did not testify to confirm or disprove Francis Jacobs's stories.

"Evelyn Diabo said I was 'pricking' her throughout the cross-examination to find out the truth. Don't forget, it isn't the witnesses who go to jail, it's the accused.

"The trio, Martin-Etienne-Diabo, were a clique. They all said they never talked about the case, although they constantly travelled together. Does that sound believable?

"Evelyn Diabo said she was a 'moral' supporter of the other two. Also, they all came back with the same reasons why their declarations contradicted each other, 'because the police officer did not speak English, and it was never read back to them.'

"Gerry Etienne said he was attacked with an AK47. The photographs showed no wounds, and the Crown threw out the charge.

"George Martin, says that Daniel Nicholas came into his house 'two' times, which is different from his declaration.

"Other essential elements were missing. Even though Martin read every page of his declaration before he signed it, he says the police got it all wrong. The most fascinating discrepancy is why he did not mention Guy Cross in his declaration. When faced with this fact Martin replied, 'Sure I did, when I said a guy named Daniel Nicholas' - which is a long shot stretch!

"Normally declarations are not different from the testimony.

"Francis Jacobs is the most important witness for the prosecution. He is the only witness at the Lemay house, for

counts 8 to 30. And don't be trapped by the fact that he is illiterate as all six declarations were read to him.

"Francis Jacobs said that Scot Gabriel picked him up after the August 31, 1990 fight at the Crossroads. He then changed his testimony and said that two other guys picked him up!

"Francis Jacobs said he recognized Ron Cross, Gordon Lazore and Roger Lazore. He also said that Roger was at the Lemay's.

"He contradicted himself about Roger beating him and his son with a baseball bat. Jacobs said the SQ officer got it wrong, even though he said it was read to him.

"Jacobs realizes this doesn't make sense. So he left the courtroom and came back in and said they were not read back to him. He did not even bother to cover himself and his discrepancies, he just said, 'I don't know if you were talking about the statement when it was taken or before I came back to court.'

"Francis Jacobs is not a reliable witness. Under oath he lied. You have to give credibility to the witness if you want to convict."

### House Patrols

"The Concerned citizens of Kanehsatake got together to watch over the white people's homes. Francis Jacobs presents himself as one of them. Ron Bonspille is the owner of the ambulances that were used to transport the goods and got smashed up. Why didn't he come to testify?

"Bonspille and Jacobs had a racket going, they took objects out of the white people's houses and brought them over to Ronnie Bonspille's place where an inventory was kept, and then 'turned them over to the SQ.'

"The SQ asked Francis Jacobs if he was part of the break ins. Jacobs had a generator from the Ayers and other things at

his place.

"Francis Jacobs is the only witness to the Lemay's' damaged house. His son, Corey, refused to appear. These cover counts 8, 9, 10 and 11.

"Jacobs says he saw the three accused there. Jacobs bumps into Dennis Nicholas who asked him if he had seen the guys. Then Jacobs goes to the gas bar and says nothing about anything. When he was at another house on Center Road feeding the chickens, and shots were fired, he said nothing about being at the Lemay's.

"On September 13th he makes a declaration about the Lemay's and about his involvement in storing the 'goods'. He then describes Roger Lazore without a moustache."

### Patry's Red Jeep

"Francis Jacobs is once again the only witness to the damaged red jeep. He says he saw Ron Cross driving it, and saw it a second time at the Food Bank, but said nothing about it because he was not asked to.

"Jacobs said when he saw the red jeep at the Lemay's 'it was all shot up', such damage did not show up in the first set of photographs taken by Lemay. Owner, Patry, testified when he saw the jeep later, 'She was badly hurt.' When the Crown was pressed, pictures taken by the SQ were produced showing much more damage than when the jeep was at the Lemay's."

### The Crossroads Fight and The Ambulances

"Francis Jacobs is also the main witness to the August 31, 1990 fight at the Crossroads, for counts 18, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, and 28. Jacobs said that Ron Cross pointed a gun at him and his son Corey when Ron got out of the pickup

truck. He says he heard a click, although there was a lot of noise and yelling and his car windows were closed!

"Jacobs said he was beaten with a rifle butt. The photos of him do not reflect that kind of violence. There was an argument between Jacobs and Cross, which is part of Indian warfare.

"The only witness to the damage to the ambulances was Robert Bonspiel, who said there was also a blue van parked in the Bonspille driveway during the incident.

"If there was a blue van or white car there, it would have obstructed his view.

"Robert Bonspiel also identified Ron Cross, as masked and knew him by the way he walked and moved. 'Ron had a distinctive walk.' He also said he never wrote his declaration to the police and never read it. He was in a hurry. It was the police who made it out for him!"

### The Army

"Ron Cross stands mute. The fire power of the military was seen in the videos, what they were expecting and what they saw. The reaction of the Mohawk when they reached the Pines is 'We are not afraid.' The message coming from the Mohawks is 'We will not shoot first.'

"The photo of Cloutier's face-off with the Unknown Warrior went around the world. Cloutier says he had an identical confrontation with Ron Cross which was not recorded!

"Sgt. Brault said that Ron Cross threatened to kill him. Once again, there was no witness.

"Ruler, the Army's Map Maker, said he heard many times the warriors saying, 'We are not afraid.' There was even one crazy Indian who put the weapon in his mouth and said 'Go ahead and shoot.' This really meant 'We are not afraid.

Today, we are not going to be intimidated.'

"Soldier Shellac said that Ron Cross told him he was a dummy for trying to defend a piece of land that wasn't his, adding, 'Why do you wear a scarf? Do you have bad breath? Or are you a scaredy cat?' Shellac said Ron Cross confided in him he did not want to go to jail!

"Soldier Roy was there when Ron Cross put his gun down, crossed to the other side of the razor wire that surrounded Concentration Camp TC. Roy blocked the front of the opening to the concentration camp while he told Ron Cross to go back in. Roy also saw the sign that said 'Lasagne, Your Dead Meat, 2R22R'.

"Soldier Renaud was in the tower watching for Mohawk airplanes and submarines with his camera and machine gun ready.



Aionwes was smart ordering these new war canoes.

"Soldier da Mariano said the Indians were trying to dismantle the razor wire. Bill Sears asked who he thought he was and invited him to fight, man to man. It was the same atmosphere as in the Pines where the warriors were surrounded by the firepower of the military.

"When you look at the whole situation, the motive and purpose of these acts are not criminal, particularly those military offences. When you take into consideration the kind

of world that was existing at the time and the continual outcry of 'Get off our land', the proof must be beyond a reasonable doubt with regards to the military offences. *These men were defending their land.*

"Analyze the threats. The Mohawks were not afraid. That is the only way they can be looked at. Only a fool would believe that they actually had the upper hand. *'I am not afraid'* ... with those words I will stand mute."

Summation by Owen Young, Lawyer for the Lazores

"You have to decide this case on all of the evidence that came from the witness box. In August and September 1990, there were face to face confrontations at Oka. It was in many ways a metaphor for the huge confrontation that was the Oka Crisis.

"The Oka Crisis is not in the evidence before you. Yet it is part of the circumstances in which the three accused are to be measured. The larger clash is not there. 'They are going to break and break and break agreements,' said one warrior and then he carries on.

"Consider the evidence of smaller confrontations as elements of a huge clash. The Canadian state with its massive array of fire power, large calibre machine guns, mortars, APCs, Grizzlies, which can blow the Mohawk people off the face of the earth.

"Major Tremblay when advancing on the Pines had a lot of personal protectors beside him. On the Mohawk side there were booby traps such as fishing lines, hooks, and exaggeration of numbers. There were less than 100 of them. They were standing there face to face, all the fire power aimed at them, with only their personal weapons and their bravado.

"On the Army side there is cursing, swearing and machismo. There is no politics, and no understanding as to



why they were there. On the warrior side there was a lot of politics. The two sides have face to face confrontations and tests of intimidation. The crisis is there and the two sides are saying, 'I am tougher than you are.'

"On the Army side, you have the military power of the state. On the Mohawk side you have no one ordering them to do anything. They went and stood there motivated by something powerful.

"These elements and metaphors illustrate the nature of the crisis, the conflict of values, the perceptions of history – 'They break, and break agreements,' said one warrior.

"The world views come out in every element. World views often described by the Aboriginal society and the settler society. The values of the settler society on the one side, such as Mongeon not being charged with anything for uttering death threats when he finds Roger cutting the grass. Mongeon said said, 'You fucking asshole! I am going to get my gun and kill you.'

"The settler society values do not call for Mongeon to be charged because he is a person caught in the crisis.

"What Mongeon said is a threat in the technical analysis. He intended to do it. He tried to get back into his house. He was turned back, obviously distraught.

"The Mongeons were thought of as Indian supporters. This was a clash of momentous proportions. The settler society values and the Aboriginal values. Roger was sent to clean up and he is charged with stealing the lawn mower. These men are considered by the settler society as common criminals.

"Ruler, the Map Maker, had remarked that some powerful motivating force makes them bring up their bravado to stand up to the fire power of the Canadian Army.

"The Army says, 'You have to shoot first.' The Indians

say, 'This is our land. Get off our land.'

"Francis Jacobs makes arrangements for his House Patrol and the warriors. Some kind of cooperative organization is going on.

"As you look through the videos, there is a structure behind the scenes. These people are in Oka over an issue and it is a unifying force.

"Crown Briere refers to the land as 'warrior occupied territory'. There is something else at stake here.

"At Mongeon's on August 26th they are having a party, saying good-bye to one another. 'We need the truck to transport the wounded.'

"What are they dealing with? It is nothing common. The forces of tremendous state power, guts and personal power ran face to face. Videos of the events in the Pines show a world gone crazy, and people dealing with it on the front lines.

*"Against this backdrop was the Oka Crisis."*

"This has always been seen as a criminal case because the state charged some of the participants with criminal offences and used criminal procedures, which framed the political issues! In the context of this hearing, which is not a wide open political debate, there are only a few central issues.

"Did the three men do it? Did the events happen beyond a reasonable doubt? If so, was the act criminal?

"The jury brings a sensibility to this case. As the indictment was first framed, it created a very broad wide-ranging field of inquiry. Look at counts 57 and 59, 'obstruction of the Canadian Army and SQ police officers'. It raises a number of questions, the role of the authorities, the SQ and the Army for over an entire month.

"The case disintegrated over the question of disclosure,

and eight other counts were thrown out because there was virtually no evidence.

*"The political issues buried in there are phenomenal.*

"Count 57 for the whole month of September 1990 raises the question of why the Mohawks were there. The jury would have had to consider this because counts 57 and 59 raised political issues. But once thrown out, all the military counts against Gordon and Roger Lazore were eliminated.

"There is no evidence from Corey Jacobs or Ronnie Bonspille. The count of wounding Gerry Etienne is gone.

"The photos of the red jeep put into evidence at the beginning showed a different condition than the photos submitted in the end.

"The Mohawk were there standing up for whatever motivated them. The confrontations were over grand issues, not personal disputes. When the indictment whittled down, there was no need to present the backdrop of the Oka crisis, nor the mentality and mind set of all the people. Their importance as a legal factual issue begins to disappear.

"That is why you are not hearing any defence evidence. Whether or not to call in a defence is decided at the end of the crown's case.

"A change of direction came when 57 and 59 disappeared.

"There is no obligation on the accused to prove their evidence. The state must prove their case against them beyond a reasonable doubt. But there must be a case to meet. Did they commit acts and were the acts in all circumstances criminal?

"The position of the defence is that knowing what the issues were, knowing that the evidence of the Oka crisis was in place, the defence chose not to call evidence, but to stand on the cross-examination. There is a reasonable doubt whether they committed the acts.

*"The defence takes the position that there is no case.*

"The role of the jury is in dealing with the evidence. All 12 jurors are Judges of the Superior Court of Quebec, and juries bring societal values into court.

"The general principles of law are decided by the Judge. The jury is supreme when it comes to the facts. The prosecution has to put all evidence before you to determine guilty or not guilty. You have come here with your common sense and general experience.

"In the Crossroads fight on August 31st, did Ron Cross and Gordon Lazore use a firearm to commit an offence? Gordon did not have a firearm.

"The men meet in a house in the Pines. Angus Nelson and his friend, Morris Binette, show up. They talk about the motor bike. They talk about Francis Jacobs being involved in the looting. The firearm is in the bin of the pickup truck. They did not plan to do more than talk to Francis Jacobs. At the end of the incident, Ron Cross shoots the gun off in the air as a punctuation war whoop.

"Francis Jacobs is the only witness who can put together the series of events. He goes to the Lemay house one day in the evening. He sees three guys coming out of the window, hears people inside, can't see any damage, the red jeep is in front, and he leaves because he is told to leave. He does not see mischief in the house. He infers the facts.

"The next day he sees the house and the jeep shot up. From that you are asked to believe the three guys did it. Either you believe him or you use your common sense.

"There is no magic in assessing the weight of the evidence. How did the witnesses look? Does the evidence make sense? Are they merely mistakes?. Is there corroboration? You can forgive mistakes, but you cannot convict on mistakes. The witness, SQ photographer cannot

remember when he went to take pictures at Lemay's.

"Soldier Cloutier said the Indians taped two magazines together to overlap so they can 'kill faster'. What about the Army? Major Tremblay says he uses this method himself.

"Human memory is tricky. Cloutier said there were no journalists to record his confrontation with Ron Cross. How do you get two people, Ron Cross and the Unknown Warrior, to say exactly the same thing? This is not reasonable.

"Robert Bonspiel says the white car was in the driveway because of the broken glass around it. But the blue van was moved and no glass was around, which must have been swept up. He also creates a situation where, if it was there, it would have blocked his vision. Could he hear what he said he heard?

"Angus Nelson was credible. Even the crown attacks him. He said it was dark out, that Gordon Lazore kicked Corey Jacobs in the butt. He did not slant his evidence. The overriding rule is whether it is reasonable.

"Gerry Etienne drives through the barricades without lights. He says he did not want to shine his lights in the eyes of the warriors. This evidence is absurd!

"Francis Jacobs's evidence was not corroborated by Corey Jacobs, which gives an adverse inference. Ronnie Bonspille was, according to Francis Jacobs at the fight. Bonspille did not testify, which gives an adverse inference. Jacobs's evidence stinks!

"The contents of documents prepared under the National Defence Act is not in evidence in the court. It is merely there and not responded to.

"Francis Jacobs is a key witness at the Lemay house, at Mongeon's house and at the Crossroads Fight. He also described elaborate schemes to take goods here and there, which were stored at the Bonspille's.

"Judy Bonspille said, on the other hand, that she did not see anything unusual in her husband's office. The property protecting scheme is missing from her evidence. Robert Bonspiel does not corroborate Jacobs's inventory scheme.

"The photographer of the jeep contradicts the evidence of the tow truck driver.

"There are inconsistencies throughout the declarations of Jacobs. In other words, he is lying.

"Angus said Roger was not at the Crossroads fight.

"The crown suggests that there are 'good warriors', like Major, and 'bad warriors'. Dennis Nicholas is a 'good' warrior. The men confronting the Army are seen as 'bad warriors'. Jacobs is crucial to all of the pre-army charges.

"At the Lemay house, Jacobs is the only eye witness. When he says the jeep is shot up, he is willing to say anything to convict these guys. He saw a light on at the Lemay house, and heard shots in the distance. Because of the terrain it is difficult to tell where the shots come from. Jacobs said the jeep was shot up at a time when it was not, as shown in the first set of photos. But he knew it was shot up later on, and knew it would achieve a conviction of these three men.

"At the Mongeon house, on August 26th, Mongeon leaves and comes back. He meets Roger who says, 'We are having a party. The Army is close.' They are saying good-bye to one another.

"On August 27th Roger says, 'The end is near. We will need your truck to carry the wounded.' There were no white people left on the Kanehsatake Territory. Mongeon gave him the truck. He had no fear of Roger.

"What was once bizarre became normal. Mongeon is afraid of being exposed. He said, 'I had no choice. Everyone was bitter towards the whites on the reserve. I did not need a machine gun to my head to let them use the truck. I did not

want to take one side or the other.'

"It is not his fear of Roger, it is the circumstances he finds himself in.

"At the Crossroads fight Corey Jacobs ends up with a baseball bat. It is taken away and he is kicked in the butt. But Corey Jacobs and Ronnie Bonspille, who was there, did not show up in court. There is not enough to convict.

"This is a criminal trial of basic issues which occurred while a world has gone mad. What is normal becomes unusual and vice versa.

"There is no need for the accused to prove their innocence. The administration of Justice requires fairness. Think about the manner in which this evidence came out through photos and declarations. The evidence is unreliable. The accused are relying on the common sense of the jury."

## Tuesday, January 14, 1992 Judge Greenberg Wants A Hanging

*MNNS - Side note:* It is rumoured that the SQ tried to set a trap to kill Lasagna when he disappeared and did not show up for court. A bench warrant was issued for his arrest and the SQ followed him all night. Finally when he went to a home in LaSalle, the SQ surrounded him, hoping he would do something that would allow them to kill him. He did not resist and was taken into custody.

### Greenberg Addresses the Jury

The Judge reviewed with the jury every count of the indictment. In the United States the Judge is not permitted to say anything about the case. In England Judges comment on the facts of the case. In Canada a Judge is permitted to comment on the facts, but the jury doesn't have to listen.

Before explaining the legal matters, Judge Greenberg said, "A little humour isn't a bad thing. But there will no longer be any more humour if I can help it!" (Every time we laughed, he threatened to throw us out of the courtroom.)

"An accused has a right to be tried by a jury of 12 of his peers." (but not Indian peers) He talked about the Magna Carta, that Canada only got its Charter in 1982 (which Elijah Harper, an Indian, stopped ratification of), the right to bring habeas corpus, and trial by Judge and jury.

"The jury system is not always perfect. In the deep South Black people were not permitted to be on juries, and all white juries often convicted a Black person. (What about in Canada?) You must Judge with your brain, not your heart, without prejudice. The jury must act rationally.

"It is the best system in the world!"

He coughed and looked at the ceiling when he said that!



"The jury has to decide based on the evidence before them, not on speculations and guesses."

Greenberg had three thick books of notes 'to keep the record straight'.

"In France the Judge goes into the jury room and deliberates with the jury. (They're cozier there!) Our system is adversarial, not inquisitorial. In France they have an investigative Judge. (Here they have a big mouthed prejudiced Judge). In France the Judge decides if charges are laid. Here the police do that.

"In this case, the accused stood mute. They pleaded neither guilty or not guilty. The trial proceeded as though they had pleaded 'not guilty'."

The law system is set up so that those who challenge it are harassed if they fight back. When the 'rulers' abuse the people, they usually don't fight back. It is meant to kill the fighting spirit in people. No one is allowed to settle anything themselves. They are forced to go to an expensive practitioner of the system to arbitrate for them.

"Francis Jacobs is a key witness." (and the biggest liar of all the Crown's witnesses)

What makes people lie? Why don't people tell the truth? Fear of punishment? Threats from the authorities?

Judge Greenberg laid down the following guidelines to the jury on how to Judge witnesses:

Does the witness -

1. have any interest in the outcome of the case? (Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs has a personal axe to grind, revenge, animosity, fear of the police, and wants to stay out of jail himself.)
2. have demeanour, sincerity, spontaneity, openness, confidence? (*Cry Baby* kept forgetting, got mixed up, saw things that weren't there at the Lemay

House; Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne's fresh guy attitude and wearing dark glasses in the dark courtroom so you couldn't look into his lying eyes.)

3. have had an opportunity to see the events? (*Cry Baby* saw Roger Lazore at the Lemay's and at the Crossroads fight and identified him, although Roger wasn't there).
4. have the capacity to remember and relate facts - intelligence, education, perception, observation, memory? (A good liar has to be very smart.)
5. have contradictions within his testimony? Do the explanations for the contradictions make sense?
6. have contradictions with the testimonies of other witnesses? (i.e.; the singing canaries, Martin, Diabo and Etienne)
7. have logic, reasonableness? Does it make sense? (A lot of evidence was far out!)

"Every civilized society has laws to protect its *property* (which is much more important than human beings). Without it there would anarchy. The strong would prey upon the weak (as Canada does).

"The Criminal code and police forces are important (to keep all the people in line especially those who might question the 'rulers').

"Society has to have laws, police forces and courts. (Indian society did not have this. Therefore, it wasn't civilized because it did not practice the violence and brutality of the European invaders).

"A national police force is brought in when order has broken down (or when they get tired of justifying their oppression and brutality and decide it's time to scare the oppressed out of their wits! Sometimes it works and sometimes it doesn't!).

"The Judge is neutral and objective (but not in this case). He explains the law (that goes against the accused) and the jury will decide whether the accused is guilty or not (the Judge will show the jury how to find the accused guilty and get away with it!)."

There should be a high presumption of innocence, but not with this Judge. The burden is on the state to prove guilt beyond a reasonable doubt. And they are trying to with the help of made-up evidence, lying or threatened witnesses, ambitious Crown prosecutors and racist Judges.

On each count, each accused is presumed to be innocent until the state has proved guilt beyond a reasonable doubt. All 12 jurors must be convinced that he is guilty or not. So go to it jurors, and if you have a good fight in the jury room, you'll get away with it because you're doing it in the name of justice! And if you make a mistake, you don't have to go to jail.

"Reasonable doubt is based on the proof. The Crown is not obliged to prove guilt beyond any doubt. The proof to an absolute certainty is not required." (This must be why Crown Prosecutor Briere had to invent a lot of his evidence.)

Does the juror have inner moral certainty that the accused is guilty? Didn't Greenberg just finish saying, 'You Judge with your head, not your heart, that morals have nothing to do with it.'?

The burden of proof applies to each count and to each essential element within the count. If one element is missing, then the entire offence falls.

In comparing direct and indirect, circumstantial evidence, neither category is superior to the other. For example, did Ron Cross damage Patry's red jeep? No one saw him do it. Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs infers he did. Robert *Yessir! Nossir!* Bonspiel says he saw Ron Cross smash the

ambulance windows, but we know he's a liar.

Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs is the main witness for the white man's court and he's also a big liar. What would have happened to Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs if there was no punishment? Would he have told the truth? Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs is lying because he fears punishment over his activities. The white man's system makes it more profitable to lie. The poor will lie out of fear, but the rich can afford to lie and then pay for proper defence.

Greenberg talked about aiding and abetting, how the jury could convict them all for just standing around while another guy committed the act.

Those in possession of stolen property are as guilty as the original thieves. So the original people who stole the Western Hemisphere from the Indians and those who now have it are all equally guilty of the theft?

Upon receiving a requisition, the Army must comply. There is no evidence that a letter with such a request was ever passed from the Minister of Public Security to the Army. So we don't know for sure if the Army had a right to be in Oka.

The Army was there in Oka and comes in when called, in a state of war or national emergency. Was it a war with the Mohawk, or was the emergency to keep the SQ from killing the Mohawks and prevent more SQ officers from getting killed?

The soldiers had the powers and duties of police officers.

Greenberg said, "No one is permitted to take the (man-made) law into their own hands. For example, Gerry Etienne and George Martin ran down Scot Gabriel. No one had a right to retaliate. Why didn't they call their lawyer or report it to the police?" (Is he joking?)

This incident was meant to intimidate Etienne and Martin off the territory, due to the conflict and struggle between the

groups created by the white man. The warriors would have gladly escorted them off the reserve.

"If Francis Jacobs was involved in the looting, no one had the right to beat him up." (Who was going to protect the warriors or believe them?)

Judge Greenberg says an assault is when the victim did not consent to be beaten, and the perpetrator seriously carries the beating out or threatens to use a real or imaginary weapon. Does anyone consent to be beaten?

The Judge is guiding or pleading with the jury to find Ron Cross guilty. He applied the criteria to each and every count so that the jury could make no other choice.

Shame, shame on the Canadian Army. How can one Mohawk man terrify the whole Canadian Army! This is while the Canadian Army had all their armaments and weaponry pointed at Ron Cross.

A good question is why were all those armaments being pointed at the Mohawks anyway? It was done intentionally, without their consent, the Canadian Army soldiers have been identified as the offenders, and they intended to harm the Mohawks.

The Army actually took Ron Cross's threats seriously, that he was going to wipe out the whole Army single handedly!

Judge Greenberg had a hard time saying the word "piss" when he quoted the words of Ron Cross to Soldier Boy Roy, "I'll kick the piss out of you, boy."

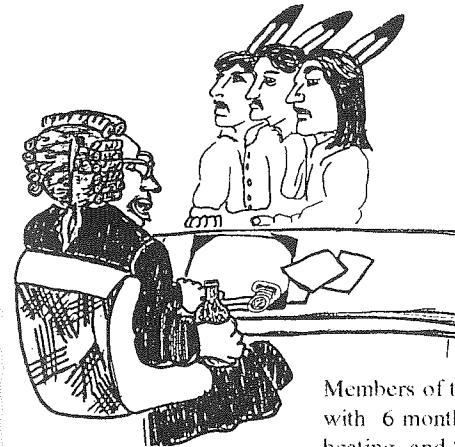
Then Greenberg said, "Both sides were restrained. It could well be that Ron Cross never meant any of these threats. It was just to show bravado. A macho image. He never intended to shoot or kill anybody."

*Then he continued to instruct the jury to convict, that they had no choice in the matter.* By this time the jury was all tired, nervous and would only remember what he said at the end of

his speech.

In the property counts, Greenberg said breaking and entering could be just about anything, even giving a side look at the place.

By now Greenberg had driven the jury right out of their skull!



Members of the jury, I recommend a conviction with 6 months for carrying guns, 6 months for the beating, and 25 years for embarrassing Canada.

The jury has 67 verdicts, with deliberations from 9:30am to 7:00pm everyday, including weekends, until they reach a verdict on each and every count.

A hung jury before a hanging Judge.

Unlike some countries, Canada, with the exception of treason and sedition, does not have political crimes (but does commit them and makes laws allowing the state to get away with it). But there can be political overtones. The Oka Crisis occurred, connected to land claims.

But this is not allowed to be the issue here.

"Our law requires that the rightfulness of any such land claims be settled in a court of law (that historically refuses to deal fairly and equitably with Indian legal claims)."

*Conflict of values of two cultures explain the origins of the Oka Crisis.*

It is as if Judge Greenberg was saying, "Do not listen to what Mr. Young told you. You will decide how I tell you."

With regard to the soldiers, there is a causal relationship between the charges and the arrival of the armed forces. Their arrival caused and resulted in the "offences". But the Judge doesn't want to let that get in the way of convicting the warriors.

Judge Greenberg commented on the defence.

"The defence says, according to the evidence, Jacobs is a liar. Each accused should be acquitted on each count involving Jacobs. The September 1st Crossroads incident was a fight, not a beating. Robert Bonspiel, Diabo-Etienne-Martin are all unreliable witnesses and so you should acquit on all offences relying on their testimony.

"They ask you to remember all the contradictions between the witnesses and what they said in written statements.

"As to counts of threats and weapons, the overwhelming fire power of the Army, Mr. Peris said all of what Mr. Cross did there was merely bravado, psychological warfare to show soldiers he was not afraid. He never harmed anyone.

"The Crown is now asking for a verdict of guilty."

Even if the witnesses were liars the jury is asked to believe them.

This is a railroading of the three warriors. Judge Greenberg is making sure that the system does not work for Indian people, or any Indian issues. His prejudices are coming out, and continues to confirm that the Red Man cannot have justice in the white man's court.

#### Owen Young Responds

Owen objects to the Judge's remarks.

The Judge actually argued the Crown prosecutor's case.

Owen said, "In the National Defence Act, the Judge said the jury could deal with the law. The contents of the request for the Army's presence were not admitted."

Then the Judge told the jury, "If you decide, I want you to come back and tell me what you are doing." No jury has to justify! This is interference with deliberations and against the jury's oath of secrecy. This is illegal!

Owen continued, "Specifically, you summed up the Crown's position.

"The defence's position is fairly simple, a whole number of witnesses cannot be believed or relied upon. Offences have essential elements but two broad ways of looking at them.

"The jury is invited to consider the mental component necessary to make a criminal act. They are not required to look at evidence piecemeal. You threw the elements into a large pot and told them to consider all of the evidence, whether the acts were criminal in all of the circumstances, including the backdrop of the Oka Crisis. This was 50% of the Judge's address. It is extraordinary that they must consider *all* of the evidence.

"As a matter of law, in going through the counts, item by item, you took each of the elements, related them to the evidence that supported a conviction, but ignored that which discredited the witnesses. The effect is you dismantled the defence.

"For the Patry jeep, you referred to two sets of pictures to the jury and the damage on the door. When you described it, you said it looked more vandalized than in the first set of pictures. There is no evidence whatsoever that before the Oka Crisis the damage was not already there.

"You said the jeep was damaged. The question is what condition was it before August 9th?

"The question of Mongeon's truck and fear of Roger.



You contradicted the defence's observation. Mongeon felt exposed because of all the circumstances. When Roger talks to him, he fears the circumstances. You said his only possible fear is from Roger's gun.

"The Crown said Roger Lazore was laughing, 'Roger felt it was a monumental farce.' This is a different, ironic, valid interpretation. Roger thought that about the entire series of events.

"The Crossroads fight. Regarding the baseball bat, it could be an item of sport or a weapon. Francis Jacobs's bat was taken from him by Gordon and he was hit in the head. Gordon was being attacked by Francis Jacobs.

"Jacobs could not identify Roger. You want all three to be found guilty even if Roger wasn't there. On August 31, Mongeon said Jacobs was there. Had Mongeon known Gordon, he would not have charged him with stealing the truck.

The Judge was getting mad. His eye brows went higher and higher.

"The effect is that you bolstered Jacobs's evidence. The use of a firearm while committing an indictable offence. It is not a question of law. There is a question of two extremes – the story of Jacobs and of the three shots. Angus Nelson said one shot was fired, isolated from the event. You told them one or the other story was a matter of law.

"You dismantled the defence. You leave critical elements.

"Yes, the jury should consider all of the evidence. The effect of your charge is that there was no possible excuse for pointing the firearm. In breaking and entering, the presumption of intention, proof of lawful excuse, lies on the accused. This is a constitutional matter. Look through the evidence, look for the lawful excuse.

"It is the law that lawful excuse is in the evidence. The

jury is left with the impression that it was resolved and to give a verdict of guilty.

"Is the jury expected to look at the evidence as a whole? Mongeon put his alarm on and hoped that no one would go in. He left the house unlocked, which constitutes lawful excuse.

"With regard to mischief at Lemay's, the evidence is circumstantial. He was there. Who committed the mischief? The question is Jacobs's credibility. We ask that the evidence be dealt with evenhandedly.

"You colour the events and some of the things you said were not in this trial. For example, the mischief at Mongeon's. You told the jury that it was based on circumstantial evidence, that Francis Jacobs had seen them at the house, that the door was left unlocked."

(The Judge had pleaded to persuade the jury to convict, without reviewing for them the events as a whole.)

"You summed up the Crown's position, better than he ever could. You used your own words, not his words. You made a powerful presentation of the Crown prosecutor's position seeking conviction.

"On the other hand, of the defence you kept saying, 'These are their words, they are not mine.' You distanced yourself from the defence. You put the Crown's position in powerful language demanding conviction.

"In explaining the law, you have the right to sum up and it must be evenhanded. The Charter of Rights eludes to this. (And if you don't, we'll appeal this case). The only remedy is a mistrial. You stepped into the arena, took the Crown's position and told the jury to convict! (You disgusting old fool!). It cannot be corrected. We can't reexamine the evidence so you might as well write off this trial! We need a trial that is independent and impartial.

"You got the jury so confused that they are hopelessly

lost. No jury could figure this mess out. The facts are simple, but your explanation has left this jury where it would be impossible to have confidence in their verdict.

"It's a hung jury and you better resolve this, because it will go to another jury!"

### Julio Peris Responds

"You did not treat Ron Cross in an equitable fashion before the jury. You took elements of proof that pointed to guilty. You never presented the other side which would lead to a not guilty verdict.

"With regard to Soldier Roy, on three occasions you spoke of this. You did not mention that he was blocking the path of Ron Cross. Also, Etienne having hit Scot Gabriel the night before to justify the accused's presence at George Martin's house. On two occasions you told the jury you were neutral. The proof you took were the elements that pointed to the guilt of the accused. You were pleading to the jury on behalf of the Crown.

"You never gave examples that point to innocence. You never pointed out that Ron Cross did not do it. You said that Etienne left because of threats. That is not the only inference from the evidence.

"In count #22 you instructed the jury, whether it was one or three shots, that the shot was committed.

"Regarding threats, you closed the door by telling the jury they were not in jest.

After Owen and Julio finished protesting to the Judge, Crown Prosecutor Briere took Judge Greenberg out for lunch at the Aloha in St. Jerome.

Judge Greenberg must have had second thoughts about everything. After lunch he decided to readdress the jury. He

had no choice as he did not want a mistrial or appeal.

Nevertheless, the damage has been done. A railroad conviction is imminent.

Wednesday, January 22, 1992  
Lasagna And Noriega Found Guilty

MNNS - The political trial arising out of the Mohawk War at Oka has come to an end.

After six days of fighting like cats and dogs, the jury convicted Ron Lasagna Cross and Gordon Noriega Lazore. They acquitted Roger 20-20 Lazore of all charges.

Julio Peris and Owen Young, hard working unpaid lawyers for the accused, had an impossible case. They went in without a plea or a defence. Ron Cross was found guilty of beating up Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs, of walking around in the Pines with a weapon (and scaring the army), and busting up the windows of two ambulances. Gordon Lazore was found guilty of beating up Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs and acquitted of everything else.

Ron Cross got off 27 of 50 counts, Gordon got off 10 of 20 counts, and Roger got off all 12 counts.

The Mohawk stood mute throughout. It was a political issue. They did not plead guilty or not guilty, and they refused to defend themselves from the criminal charges. They never submitted to the jurisdiction of the court and did not answer to anything. This is the statement of the Mohawk Nation!

It could mean that the Judge will not be too severe in sentencing, but don't count on it! They will do some time. And a few more charges will fall on Friday.

The jury was severe on the Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs beating because the white values conflicted with Indian values. The jury thinks that personal conflicts have to be settled through "white system" paperwork and not "face to face as men". Jacobs ran to the white authorities to tell on the warriors and to help convict them, and the jury supported him.

All of the threats to the soldiers were thrown out. They were not considered to be threats, but instead meant, "We are not afraid ... We will not be intimidated." The jury accepted that when Ron Cross said those words, he was merely telling the military, "We are not afraid to die."

Julio and Owen said, "We have no reason to be anything but proud. They never submitted to the jurisdiction of the white man's court, and they did well."

It was a real defeat for the Crown. They threw 59 charges at them of which 30, maybe even as many as 40, may be thrown out.

In the final analysis, we will never win in the white man's court. We are being Judged by their values. The Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs beating was for treason against his own people. *The Jacobs incident was an internal Mohawk problem which should have been resolved by the Mohawk people.* We have our own system to deal with this. He ran to the white man's system, and the white man's system gave him protection - and continues to protect those who work against their own people. It is the most serious incident that the external government managed to use to create dissension among the Mohawk and to put two warriors in jail.

The politically motivated trial, in which Judge Greenberg pleaded with the jury to convict the three political warriors, in which he dismissed all the evidence in favour of the three men violating over and over again all their rights, has come to an end. It was a prosecutorial strike force meant to put our men in jail.

These prosecutions are the signs of a political program that aims to eliminate or pacify the most radical elements of the Indian movement. Continuous harassment by Canadian and Quebec death squads around the Mohawk territories help to

promote this climate of harassment. The criminalization of social and political struggles aims to penalize the activity as well as the Indian consciousness that produces them.

The *anti-Mohawk* tactics inside and outside the court primarily seeks to divert attention away from the legality of the Mohawk Nation's struggle. Political power as it is exercised through the Canadian parliament, the government, the parties and the institutions of the state is a system which can best be described as "parliamentary fascism".

Parliamentary fascism is the public's tolerance of the state using violent oppressive measures to maintain its power. It institutionalizes systemic repression of opposition so that people, like the Indian people, are the helpless prey of the state and its owners. The Mohawk dynamically defending themselves and their lands from the police attack are outcasts, labelled as *criminals* and *terrorists*. This trial of three warriors is a clear attempt to criminalize anything that is not acceptable to oppressors.

Democracy does not try to abolish protests, but to make them harmless, picturesque occurrences, as the Oka Crisis was. Any serious challenge or questioning is deemed dangerous and subsequently isolated, stripped of its ideological content, and portrayed by mainstream agencies as "mindless hooliganism". In the Oka Crisis, the government hired public relations firms to "bash" the Mohawk throughout and after the event.

The state keeping political issues out of this trial is the desperate act of a fearful nation that is in a state of "dysfunctional democracy", practised on those within its society who refuse to live in isolation, or abide by or live through the mercy of the state.

### A Lesson from the Oka Crisis

In power politics, stronger nations use coercion, leverage, threat, control of resources, rewards, punishments and force of arms to influence or control weaker nations. Thus peoples, cultures, religions, ethnic or political identity groups or private citizens cannot be heard in this system. Maintaining such power ultimately requires armed might.

In 1990 the Mohawk transcended Canada's national state politics. We showed that we are part of the common plight of humanity. We are fighting for our identity, to be recognized, to no longer be oppressed by the ruling factions.

The heroic act of self-defence and protection of our homeland, the stand of our people against anti-Indian Canada/Quebec fascism, was an indication of our determination to continue our ancient struggle for our identity.

We have shown Indians and non-Indians throughout the world how we will carry out our original instructions - to care for the land. Rather than giving in to threats and suffering, we stood up and gained the attention of others throughout the world who also struggle against oppression. In the defence of our rights at Oka, we heralded the many struggles for identity, recognition and inclusion of various oppressed people throughout the world. International solidarity is very important to all who suffer oppression.

Mohawks must solve the continuing crisis so that we can live in conditions of peace and justice. In dedicating ourselves to help achieve these goals, we must carry on the spirit of the Mohawk, our allies and our supporters who fought with us in the Oka Crisis that plagued the summer of 1990.



## Monday, January 27, 1992 Sentence Hearings Begin

MNNS - Today hearings in preparation for sentencing began.

Julio Peris put forward a motion for a mistrial.

Judge Greenberg said, "After five and a half days of deliberations the verdicts were rendered. All my instructions were fair." (patting himself on the back and putting his arm out of place)

Four more charges were taken off each accused last Friday, so Lasagna now has 16 charges down from 20, and Noriega has 5 down from 9. Greenberg said that counsel used "intemperate immoderate language". (in reference to Owen and Julio blasting him over his stupidity)

A whole bunch of technical issues came up. Count 24, a weapons charge, has to be tied into count 27, a charge pertaining to Corey Jacobs. Count 27 had been thrown out. But since now both charges were tied together, they either both had to be both thrown out or both put in. Greenberg decided to put count 27 back in.

It's plain the Judge wants something on Ron Cross.

The practitioners of the system love to get technical. It confuses everybody including the Judge, and is probably meant to scare people. However, the system is not able to handle people who are not afraid of it. It starts to break down when they cannot control people through confusion, threats and fear of strong arm tactics.

Diane Lazore, sister of Gordon Lazore, of Akwesasne and two other people were sitting in the audience. They stayed for the morning, got confused and left.

Major Weird Al Tremblay, A Canadian Ninja Killer

Weird Al Tremblay was brought in from his Oka Crisis

Museum in his basement, which includes photos of warriors, guns and drawings of wounds. Briere got so excited he did not even wait for Weird Al to swear on the bible before he started to question him.

Weird Al clicked his jackboots and began to brag. He told us how smart he is and about his ballistics expertise, his B.A. at RMC, his specialized training in firearms, on and on. He knows everything from simple hand guns to artillery guns and can shoot from a plane or from the ground. He can kill innocent men, women and children from any direction. He even trains other people to do it without wasting bullets. He teaches explosives every day.

One woman from Kanehsatake said, "This explains why he's so creepy."

Since 1982 Weird Al has made a career of ballistics and firearms. He took a 16 month intermediate course on how to kill people in Gagetown, New Brunswick. He knows all this but still could not scare the Mohawk!

"I know how to use a hand gun, submachine gun, assault and attack weapons, sniper<sup>1</sup> rifles, grenades, explosive systems, and short and medium anti-tank weapons\*, mortar\* and artillery weapons."

He can shoot every machine gun known to man from aviation and combat vehicles\*, including helicopters. He's a whiz with drum charges\*, optical visors\* and telescopes. (What kind of job can he get when he gets out of the Army? We hear he wants a job as a movie director of gory war films, such as "Dr. Kill Gore".)

Julio Peris, lawyer for the Lasagna, jumped up and asked, "Why do we have to listen to all this?"

Judge Greenberg said, "We have to consider Ron Cross's over all behaviour. (What about this creep?) Major Tremblay

<sup>1</sup> The end of the chapter has a description of the items marked with a star.

knows what kind of guns he saw in the Pines.”

Weird Al continued, “As commander of Company 3, we carried out a tightening of the perimeter around the lacrosse box in the Pines near the cemetery. The warriors, with their AK47s\* and M16s\*, threatened us in such a way as to stop the progression of my ABMs\*, Grizzlies\*, APCs, tanks, anti-tanks, anti-tank tanks, submachine guns, helicopters and over a thousand well armed (but scared) soldiers.

“There was also a circus tent in the Pines. We didn’t know what was in it. (It could have hid deadly Mohawk weapons or tigers, giraffes and Hannibal’s elephants.)

“Those warriors were aggressive .. pointing their weapons .. and giving us dirty looks ...”

At this point the Mohawk women in the vomitorium could not stop from breaking into laughter. The angry Judge told them to stop smiling and laughing or leave. Some Indian people have huge dimples and can’t help looking like they are smiling all the time.

Then Judge Greenberg pulled out a camo hanky from his pocket and proceeded to clean out his nose. Honestly!

Weird Al’s thumbs are the kind that go far back, probably from firing too many weapons, or maybe he’s artistic.

Weird Al said that Ron Cross used the same weapons throughout the crisis – an M16, a Ruger\* and a U.S. combat knife\*. “Around Concentration Camp TC, which I set up, I also saw him carry a 12 calibre rifle or 12 gauge shotgun.”

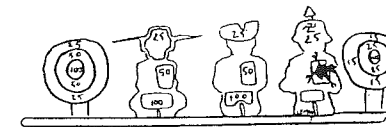
Weird Al set the courtroom up like a shooting gallery, displaying a huge array of guns. He went on to describe the bullets, the chargers, semi and automatic shooting, 940 shots per minute, what could be converted to shoot even faster.

He picked up one of the guns from the table and demonstrated how to use it. “You put your finger on the trigger, pull it back and ta-ta-ta-ta-tat! This baby costs

about \$1,000., which is a high price for a hunting weapon. But can she kill, injure and wound!”

He talked about the ammunition, used by NATO, developed to cause optimal wounds with the smallest calibre possible. Picking up a bullet, Weird Al lovingly licked it with his tongue and rubbed it with his bent thumb. (Did he learn that at Gagetown?)

“This baby’s a Full Metal Jacket. She can go through bullet proof vests like the ones soldiers wear.”



I taught the SQ everything they know about suicide missions!

Next he brought out a whole bunch of enlarged poster-sized coloured pictures of wounds – deep, gory, bloody, splattered, shattered, scattered, messy wounds.

Weird Al’s eyes lit up as he described how the bullets performed when they struck human bodies.

“The velocity when it strikes a person usually produces fragments and an explosion within the body. There is a deep wave cavity and it destroys the capillary zones and the surrounding area of the muscles. I have many photos and hours of videos on this subject. (He usually looks at them before supper.) This wound is serious!

“When the bullet hits, it mushrooms so it cannot be pulled out, like a fish hook.”

So why did the Army bring in all their weaponry, loaded to the teeth and ready to fire on men, women and children? And what kinds of wounds would their weapons create?

"This micro metric screw\* can be adjusted to shoot from 100 metres. The weapon used by Mr. Cross is an American government purchase. It is impossible to legally purchase this, only on the black market, or from the U.S. Army!

"On September 10th or 11th Ron Cross came to brag to me about having taken one of the chargers of the Canadian Army and what he could do with his weapon. I told him he wasn't suppose to have Department of Defence property without going through the proper channels.

"Cocking of the trigger will make the cylinder rotate (as he did with a gun in the courtroom, at which point the Judge dived to the floor). Ron Cross's pants were bulging and I imagine they were full of bullets!" (Just a typical Mohawk. Weird Al's just jealous!)

Crown Prosecutor Briere was really excited by this time.

"These two chargers were tied together. This ammunition is exclusive to the AK47. When the bullet strikes its target it will start to turn or rotate on itself. It is a Chinese made AK47 which can be legally bought in Canada at a low price from Century Arms\*, which has a U.S. subsidiary (and you can't use your Club Zed points). They are the largest military retailers in the world. Arm Lite in Montreal sells these for \$1,000.

"Ron Cross's weapon was stamped *U.S. Military Arsenals*. Civilians are not supposed to keep one of these weapons. They have to be turned back to the government when a person is discharged from the military.

"On September 26th 1990, there was a huge fire on the sight of Concentration Camp TC, which contained the carcasses of a multitude of weapons destroyed by the fire

immediately prior to the exit of the Mohawks."

"The fire did not melt down everything (damn it!). We can't positively identify much of the weaponry (oh!), though we can identify AK47s, 3 AKMs\*, 12 gauge shot guns, pump action Remingtons, 12 calibre model 870s\*, chargers, SKS\*, semi-automatic weapons, a Soviet made 10 bullet charger\*, folded rifle stocks, Chinese weapons, three M16 barrels or AR15s\*, triggering mechanism of the Ruger\*, broken parts of other 12 gauge shot guns..."

Briere asked, "Were there any bullets found on the premises?"

"Yes, a large quantity was recovered in the TC cesspool (Pu!)."

The hearing on sentencing continues on Thursday, January 30th.

\*\*\*\*\*

*Sniper rifles*, long range high powered rifles used by the mob and the government (which are one and the same) for assassinations.

*Medium anti-tank weapons*, bazookas.

*Mortars*, land mines which blow you to pieces when you step on it and release the pressure.

*Aviation and combat vehicles*, helicopters and APCs.

*Drum charges*, portable grenade launchers adapted to the M16, which only the government can have.

*Visors*, night vision scopes.

*AK47*, a semi automatic para military weapon that kicked ass in Vietnam. It is superior to the M16 and is a psychological weapon because of fear over what happened in Vietnam and in Oka.

*M16*, an American plastic cheap imitation of the AK47. It has been converted to the "Super Soaker 2000".

*ABM*, the Canadian "Armoured Bastard Mover".

*Grizzly*, a small armoured personnel carrier that runs on tracks with a 50

calibre machine gun.

*Ruger*, a mini 14.223 calibre rifle which is a varmint weapon to be used against dem Mohawk varmints.

*Combat knife*, consists of a compass, saw, blade, lighter and micro-wave oven, just in case.

*Micro Metric Screw*, an assassin's site to enable killing the victim from far away.

*Century Arms*, the same importer that got tied into the Iran Contra affair.

It sells weapons to the underdogs of the world.

*AKM*, a 22 calibre mini AK47.

*870*, a duck gun.

*SKS*, an older Chinese made long range AK47.

*Soviet made charger*, shoots grenades or anything, even bullshit.

*AR15*, a civilian M16.

*Ruger Tri-burst*, makes it shoot three bullets at a time.

## That Nasty Lasagna

MNNS - The hearings on the sentences continues.

The Judge and Crown want Ron Cross put away for a long time, even though he was found guilty only of the fight with Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs, walking around the Pines with a gun, and breaking the windows of the ambulances. So they've cooked up a big spectacle, bringing in Major *Weird Al* Tremblay to depict the World War III possible carnage backdrop, and a couple of SQ liars to attack Ron Cross's character.

Today Major *Weird Al* brought in all kinds of paraphernalia from his basement torture chamber. He had small bullets and huge bullets, which could go through three vehicles and the side wall of a tank at a distance of 500 metres. "Somebody could be killed!", said *Weird Al*.

Julio Peris asked what does all this have to do with Ron Cross.

Crown Prosecutor Briere jumped up and said, "He was there, wasn't he, and there were all those dangerous weapons there, most of them in the hands of the soldiers and some in the hands of the warriors! The warriors acted together (just like the army soldiers did). It is relevant to evaluate the whole situation" (so there!).

Julio said, "But they have to be tied into some count in the indictment, and the counts relating to obstruction and rioting have been thrown out."

Then *Weird Al* Tremblay got some more bullets, clicked them around in his hands and jingled them around in his pockets. (He's very friendly with them.)

In the meantime, Judge Greenberg, who is 5 ft. 0, seems



to be getting shorter every day from the weight of this trial!

Briere cited two cases about this issue, one was in Canada (where soldiers practice killing and psychological war techniques on local Indian men, women and children), and one was in Britain (where they get others to do their fighting for them).

"In the case of riot, persons in a crowd start to act for a common purpose that reasonable citizens fear. (That's right, this is exactly what the army did!) If there is any common use of gestures (like making faces), to alarm, menace or scare (the chicken shit soldiers) ..."

Julio asked, "Is the Crown going to start another trial, without the jury? For sentencing, the Judge must determine the facts. Is Ron Cross going to be sentenced for every weapon in the area including the Army's? The Judge is required by law to sentence on each of the offences that the jury found him guilty of, not on those that were thrown out."

Julio said that Ron Cross cannot be punished on the Barret gun, which was not there between September 1st and 26st, 1990.

Judge Greenberg said, I don't really want a course in weaponry (but I will listen to all this so we can find something to pin on Ron Cross)."

Weird Al next pulled out his warrior "booby trap" pictures. "We surrounded Concentration Camp TC with razor wire. Inside the warriors had defensive works to ensure their protection in case of potential firing or shooting within the perimeter. There were trenches, bunkers and casements having a highly prepared covering. The defensive position complied with military principles of erecting a defensive position, where each position was supported by trenches. All were occupied."

(What! Is he complimenting the warriors'

professionality?)

"It was possible to fire over a range of 360 degrees without having an uncovered terrain. There were fire windows for the purposes of shooting. I have a photo showing a bunker network linking two fire positions together, which enables you to move from one firing position to another without being exposed during direct attack.

"All of these positions enabled those using them to be sheltered from the firing of the military, and to be able to respond to the firing while exposing the smallest possible target. They would slow down progress of the soldiers coming into the defensive positions of the warriors."

The warriors were well prepared because they were in a defensive position. The aggressors don't need trenches and bunkers. It is a hell of a compliment. The Canadian Army were the aggressors and were totally exposed because of the warriors' defensive system. The Army was in a losing situation if they were to attack, which is what Weird Al was afraid of.

Weird Al then qualified everything he was saying, "These are my personal views based on my personal knowledge (hidden agenda, ambitions, military training, my love for violence, and my hatred for the Indians).

"The booby traps were simple but effective. This one is an Ouch Trap, a board with nails hammered in. They are concealed on the terrain, not visible, until someone steps on one. Then ouch!" (Akeee!, in Mohawk)

This trap may have been a psychological tactic as once soldiers see a buddy step on one they get scared shitless.

"This one is a Lever Ouch Trap. It's a board with nails in one end. It is placed in such a way that when someone steps on the board it swings up and strikes the person with the nails in the thighs, or thereabouts." (That could take care of Her

Majesty's jewels.)

The lever trap is very effective and is an old Indian trick used originally to catch prey. Poison or potions from natural ingredients could be added to the tips.

"This is a sophisticated one used in the Vietnam War. A hole is dug and covered. At the bottom of the hole is a board with long nails. A person steps in and gets the nails right through the shoe. (This is to catch large game like Sgt. Joe Blow. Some Mohawk women use this to catch a man!)

"This one is called 'One Foot in the Grave'. A hole is dug and planks with nails pointed downward are put across the hole. The hole is covered with leaves. The person slips into it and can't get out." (Help! Help!)

Next Weird Al pulled out an embossed, framed map of Oka, with the defensive positions shown in precious stones. Concentration Camp TC was a diamond (in the rough). He called his masterpiece "Oscar Whiskey"!

He had a blue line drawn around Concentration Camp TC at a distance of 3.3 km from the different positions, to show the danger to the surrounding area. And then there was a red line further out at 7.6 km radius.

He said a bullet could have been fired from Concentration Camp TC and killed a person eight miles away! (He's flattering the warriors.)

"In case of a shoot-out the damage potential was quite high!"

We broke for lunch. After lunch Julio Peris got ready to cross-examine Major Weird Al. At this time Crown Prosecutor and Weird Al Tremblay gave each other a knowing wink, a smile, and then Briere walked over to Weird Al, who was standing behind the witness box, and whispered a sweet nothing into his ear while tapping his behind. (Could they be

sweethearts?)

Julio started, "I agree with you, guns can kill! You stated you got a good education. Did your studies include natives?"

Weird Al Tremblay said he had studied natives, but nothing specific, except they came here over the Bering Strait (that old B.S. Theory again!).

He was given reports of 25 to 30 (empty) pages with regard to natives before the native crisis by the Army Intelligence Section. The information was classified "Top Secret" (that's why the pages were blank!).

The superior officers had top level meetings to decide which parts were given to the officers and the soldiers. (They obviously gave nothing to Weird Al Tremblay).

The reports prepared the Army to face the opponents, whom they had to understand. There were political, strategic and tactical preparations.

"We were informed there were Mohawks in the area claiming to be defending the land. The information was psychological so that the soldiers could better understand the unique mentality of the opponents."

Julio asked, "Isn't it a fact that you came to a conclusion that the opponents you were facing were taking a stand on an issue, the land in the Pines? You have been describing their positions as defensive."

Weird Al agreed the warrior positions were defensive. General Roy and Col. *Dangle* Daigle had given the orders to advance on the Pines.

"Were your opponents disciplined from a military perspective?"

"To a certain point. Some had very little discipline and let their emotions take over their actions." (which threw the Army off, so it could have been a deliberate tactic!)

"But never to a point where they caused a military threat?"

Weird Al Tremblay said it was a major military threat. "It could mean the loss of 15 soldiers. Even on September 1st, the military took a delicate approach in order to comply with minimum force precepts. We moved slowly and showed force."

"You were certain that they were not there to attack the battalion?"

"We had the status of peace officers, carrying out the strategy as dictated by the government. Weapons always represent a danger."

"On the videos we see a Mohawk with a walkie talkie telling your soldiers to sling their guns."

"It was Mad Jap who tried to diminish the tension."

"When he tells the soldiers to sling their guns you were in communication with Mad Jap?"

"I spoke to him twice during the advance."

Weird Al Tremblay and Mad Jap were assuring each other that no one wanted to shoot first.

"Mad Jap did not have complete control of the warriors. That is why it took so long to disarm the potential risk. I never authorized Mad Jap to give any kind of orders to the soldiers. He did so several times throughout the crisis."

"Your soldiers did sling their guns."

"My soldiers always have to show initiative in the situation they find themselves."

"How did you analyze those confrontations globally. What were the warriors' attitude? Aggressive, peaceful, or spontaneous movements? Were you told about the warrior who put the barrel of a weapon in his mouth and said, 'Go ahead and shoot.'?"

Weird Al said he did not see this himself.

"What did you think when you heard that story?"

"Not much, except the individual definitely had

problems." (Yes, his problem was *you* and all those white people and soldiers encroaching on Indian land and threatening to kill everybody!)

"Did this lead you to see their dedication and ties to the land?"

"One can consider this as a type of devotion to some cause."

"Did those kinds of actions conform to what you were told in understanding your opponent?"

"Generally speaking, yes."

The Major continued testifying about the M16 and AK47 semi/fully automatic weapons. "Both weapons are legal. The automatic feature is not available legally. Semi-automatic weapons can be converted easily with parts available on the market. The M16s are given to Canadian infantry men, along with the chargers. In Oka five chargers were given to each soldier. An inventory of bullets was taken on a daily basis." He added that the chargers can be lost when the soldier crawls on the ground.

"Who is the soldier who lost his charger on September 7th or 8th? And were any reasons given as to how he lost his charger?"

Weird Al Tremblay quickly said it was lost by Chief Cpl. Caron within Concentration Camp TC while on reconnaissance patrol. "It could be a problem related to the M16 and it fell out. The holding mechanism in the charger had gotten deficient. The soldiers also had billy sticks (blackjacks) and revolvers." (A charger and blackjack were left behind by the soldiers who tried to kill Randy Spudwrench Horn. Blackjacks are beating clubs made of leather and lead.)

Randy Horn was hospitalized on the 8th of September after the attempted murder by the soldiers (who were never

criminally charged). Weird Al Tremblay saw him leave through the main entrance on a stretcher with his head covered with bandages and the rest covered by blankets.

Julio asked, "You said that Ron Cross came to see you with a Canadian Army charger. Did the warriors make an accusation that Randy Horn was badly beaten by the soldiers? Ron Cross told you that Horn had been beaten. Is this one of the chargers off the weapon that belongs to the Canadian Army (left behind by your assailants)?"

Weird Al was taken aback, "Yes, it was lost on the 7th or 8th of September and Randy Horn was taken out of the Concentration Camp on September 8th."

"The gun the soldiers had says 'Canadian Forces Canadienne'. You said the one Ron Cross had said 'U.S. Military Arsenal'. Are you sure of that?" (The M16s issued by the U.S. government are stamped 'Property of the U.S. Government. So Weird Al is a liar!)

Weird Al Tremblay said he saw it on the barrel in letters, along with the inscription of the manufacturer, the Colt company.

"What distance were you from it?"

"The width of the Concentration Camp razor wire."

"Did you look at the burnt weapons on September 27th?"

"I only saw the photos. The combat engineers were responsible for this task. The weapons were still quite hot and not easy to handle. They were turned over to the SQ."

"In this photo of the burnt weapons can you identify a Barret?" (a full rifle that can take out a tank)

Today ballistics experts can prove with 100% accuracy which gun did a job. After Wounded Knee the FBI destroyed the weapons that killed the two FBI agents in order to have a stronger case against Leonard Peltier. Guess what the SQ did with the carcasses? The FBI probably advised the SQ to

destroy them so that they could not be used in the Lemay inquest to prove exactly who shot Corporal Lemay.

Regarding the Barret, Weird Al swallowed and said, "There were none in this picture taken at Concentration Camp TC. But its presence was corroborated by me during August 23rd to September 26st."

Weird Al said that no other soldiers were present when he saw the Barret, nor when it was supposedly identified after September 3rd. There were no photos. Then he said the opposite, "I last saw it on August 23rd, and I did not see the Barret again after September 1st." (and his skinny little neck got skinnier)

He saw through his field glasses RPKs being handled by three warriors.

At the end of the questioning, he stood there white as a sheet, standing ramrod straight with his arms stiff down his side. He did not move until the court translator touched him and said he could now leave the court room (then he ran for the bathroom).

Umberto *Gucchi Shoes*, SQ, took the stand. He is a short Italian immigrant from Sicily who wants to make it big with the SQ. He has. He's an investigator for the SQ, a flatfoot whose shoes are too big for him. The Mafia must be a stepping stone to a job with the SQ.

On January 22, 1992, Umberto Shoes was in court when the jury rendered its verdict. After the jury and the Judge left, Umberto Shoes, jumping up and down (like he needed to go to the bathroom), clapping his hands, said with excitement, "I saw Ron Cross across the room, with his handcuffs on, raise his arms and yell to Roger Lazore, who was standing in front of the prisoner's box, 'We did it for the Nation, and we will do it again!'"



Umberto Shoes said the courtroom was noisy, full of reporters, police, guards and court personnel. Umberto Shoes saw no one else in the courtroom except Pa Kettle Paquette sitting there. Impossible because Pa Kettle Paquette had left with the Judge and jury.

No one else heard this. Owen Young and Julio Peris were right beside the three accused, who all left together through the door behind the prisoner's dock. No one ever stepped in front of the prisoner's dock!

Next was Sgt. *Bruiser* Brunin, Detective MUC (Montreal Urban Police) Goons – Ville LaSalle, Criminal Investigation.

"I am in charge of the sale of narcotics in our territory of LaSalle. 1317 Daigneault Street in LaSalle is one of our narcotic traffic houses, part of our Jamaican organized partners in crime. Harold Lee cooks the coke for our large crack house in LaSalle, and we protect him. We don't want to close it down because it brings in a lot of money and we can get a lot of Mohawks across the river in Kahnawake hooked on drugs." (It sounded to me like he said these things.)

Bruiser Brunin said he got this information from a stool pigeon. Julio asked Bruiser why he did not act on the information and get a search warrant to close down 1317 Daigneault, if, in fact, it was a crack house.

Bruiser admitted he had never been inside. When Ron Cross was arrested no drugs were found on him.

"Around mid-December when I was investigating an attempted murder, totally unrelated to this case, I found a card in the suspect's pocket which had Ron Cross's name and a telephone number on it! (Does this mean that if someone has a card with George Bush's name on it, he's an associate of George Bush's?)

"Also, Ron Cross was with two Blacks in 1217 Gravelle

in LaSalle." (an even bigger SQ crime!)

This evidence is supposed to show up Ron Cross's bad character.

Long Skirt, a guy from the Parish of Oka, said that 970 white people, making up 266 families, were evacuated from the Parish of Oka during the Oka Crisis. These figures came from the Civil Defence of Quebec. With regard to the Mohawks, only a total number was provided. Their family structure is disregarded. White families are broken down as families, and Indians are just a number.

**Monday, February 3, 1992**  
**Chiefs Testify On Behalf Of Our Warriors**

MNNS - There were three witnesses today: Billy Two Rivers and Chief Joe Norton of the Mohawk of Kahnawake Council, and Chief Gerry Peltier of Kanehsatake Mohawk Council.

**Billy Two Rivers of Kahnawake**

Councillor, well-known wrestler, actor sometimes, Billy is an all around interesting guy. He's been on the Mohawk Council of Kahnawake for 14 years. He's always lived in Kahnawake and knows Ronald Cross and his background.

"Ron Cross is a regular person in the community of Kahnawake. He returned with his parents from Brooklyn and lost his father on a fishing trip in the Lachine Rapids right by Kahnawake Territory. His father took two of his boys, including Ron, on the river one day, and the boat hit some rocks. His father in trying to save them lost his own life.

"The Mohawk Nation is part of the Six Nations Iroquois Confederacy. Before the arrival of the Europeans to America the league of Five Iroquois nations was formed and still exists today.

"The Iroquois Confederacy constitution outlines the roles of the individuals within the Nation. The Mohawk Nation has nine chiefs who are spokesmen for the clans. Akwesasne and Kanehsatake are part of the Mohawk Nation.

"The Iroquois are the founders of a true democracy based on the 'natural rights and freedoms' of man, a highly sophisticated government structure so the will of the people is followed. All decisions are based on consensus, following three basic criteria - *Skennen* (peace), does it preserve the peace that is already established? *Kari'wiio* (righteousness), is it morally correct, right? and *Gasatstensera* (power), does it

preserve the integrity of the nation? What does it do for the present and how does it affect the future seven generations from now?

"The family unit, spirituality, political and economic elements are all combined to ensure that the individual's rights are respected within the collectivity.

"The Longhouse is made up of three clans - bear, wolf and turtle. At the head of each clan is a woman. Women are involved in all decisions of the Nation. The men provide food, shelter and protection of the Nation to ensure peace and harmony. Our ancestors were well aware that democracy must be protected by vigilance so that our power and honour is maintained.

"The Longhouse is a building which symbolizes the unity of the Iroquois Nations. Meetings and ceremonies are conducted in the Longhouse.

"If there is conflict, the first place to resolve it is within the family. Then the issue would go to the Longhouse. If the dispute is between two clans, then the third clan would be the Judge. It functions this way today.

"In times of conflict the community as a whole comes together to defend the people against any threat. During the invasion of our community in 1837 by the Patriots, the community stood together.

"The role of the men is manifested in the Men's Society under the direction of the War Chief, who is under the guidance and answerable to the Clan mothers.

"Before the Europeans invaded North America, the Indian Nations enjoyed peace and harmony. Their energies were channelled into athletic combats.

"Land is a gift from Creation and provides all the needs of our people. It ensures our survival. We are responsible for taking care of our mother the earth, which then takes care of

us. We perform many thanksgiving rituals recognizing the gifts of Creation. Our link to the land encompasses our lives.

"Today what little land we have left is precious to us. We are the indigenous people of this land. We must ensure it is here for the seven generations in the future.

"The warriors are the *Rotiskenekete*, 'the carriers of the burden of peace'. They are the men of the nation who defend our lands, homes and families, whether it's against the elements, to provide shelter, or to protect against invasion."

Julio asked Billy, "How does their responsibility come about?"

"We live in a collectivity, and the men's duties to defend the people and the land are activated during times of danger. They know their duty and act on it in a natural way. It is the law of survival.

"How does it translate in today's terms?"

"500 years of pressure and the burden of surviving as a people from attacks by governments, oppressive legislation, expropriation of our land by illegal means, and intrusions into our lives by the dominant society calls for continuous defence.

"It is the same as any state. The Jewish state being surrounded by the Arab Nations keeps the Jewish people on 24 hours alert and readiness. They are supported by the North American Nations.

"There are 3 and a half million white people living in the greater Montreal area around our territories of Kahnawake and Kanehsatake. We are small islands with continuous social, political and environmental pressures which call for continued defences. Any defensive decision is made by the people and by individuals. I have run people off from our fishing areas and white guys out of town if they are fancying our girls.

"The decision to defend is implemented by the War Chief. When the call comes and the gravity of the situation is

assessed, the men are obligated to act.

"At Kanehsatake, the men answered the call of duty to the nation. Land and people were under siege in danger of being lost and killed. We defended in many ways. My contribution was to justify our right to defend our lands through the media. I spent 78 days involved in negotiations, as an advisor, and as part of the caucus. I handled questions from the media, made political analysis of what your government was doing throughout the crisis."

Briere asked, "How are the Band Council members elected?"

"There is an election process with secret ballot voting. It is an imposed white man's system of colonial administration or bureaucracy, to control Indian people. The government created this agency to implement their policies and deliver services, with the ultimate goal of assimilation.

"The term is two years. The spokesman is the Grand Chief, Joe Norton. For the white people it is always necessary to have a head person.

"We prefer the term 'nation', not 'band'. The Mohawk Council continually tries to maintain a relationship with the federal government to respect their responsibility to our people as a nation, not as a band, which is derogatory and insulting."

Briere asked, "How did you get the job of negotiator during the Oka crisis?"

"I guess I was the best guy for the job. I dealt with media on what was coming from the government to counter the propaganda and statements being made by various government officials, the Army, and the police."

Briere screamed, "Propaganda?!!"

"Yes, the propaganda that our people were criminals, war-like, terrorists, dangerous, completely lawless. I said these were total lies, unfounded, and similar to Nazi

Germany's lies to justify their persecution of the Jews.

"In Kanehsatake the Surete du Quebec invaded and opened fire on the Mohawk women and children, who were protecting the land in the Pines. Ordinary people were put in a situation where they had to respond to an attack ordered by a municipal government who wanted our land illegally."

"What about the arms they had?"

"All people of the nation are warriors in such times. I am a warrior and I have my duties. Trying to defend our lives and our lands with bows and arrows is ridiculous. This is the 1990s, you don't use a peashooter against a semi-automatic weapon!"

"The people of Kahnawake and Kanehsatake are Mohawk. When the Mohawk of Kanehsatake were being run over by the SQ and about to be slaughtered, the Mohawk in Kahnawake came to the rescue. When we woke up and heard of the incredible attack on July 11th on our people there, we had no choice but to come to their aid. We blocked off the Mercier Bridge (which links southshore communities with Montreal) and closed off our territory."

Briere asked, "Isn't it true that firearms were already there?"

"I am not sure. I went to Kanehsatake many times for purposes of the Oka Crisis and saw no firearms. The first time was two weeks after July 11th."

"When were you in Kanehsatake?"

"It's hard to remember the exact dates because we were lost in time. We didn't know if it was Monday or Friday."

"On one occasion I met with the Kanehsatake community to get a coalition together to oppose the political forces. There were several meetings at the Trappist monastery, some at the Treatment Center. There was also a strategy group. Our purpose was to bring the issue back to a negotiating process,

which had been going on before the July 11th SQ attack in the Pines.

"I was there when the SQ roughed up elderly veterans from across Canada who were there asking the Army not to fire on their own brothers."

"I took Elijah Harper to try to resolve the issue."

"I met provincial and federal government officials until the negotiations broke down. I attended meetings at the Hilton Hotel between John Ciaccia, the Minister of Native Affairs for the Province of Quebec, federal and provincial officials. I was a liaison to try to assist in keeping the negotiations going so that the people would not be slaughtered."

"The negotiations were always on the verge of breaking down, and the Army was always ready to load and fire upon our people in the Treatment Center. They always said to us, 'This is your last chance. If you don't agree, the Army is coming in and will kill everybody. We desperately tried to stop this carnage from happening."

"I helped bring in native chiefs from across Canada to meet in Kahnawake. The meeting served two purposes, it gave the chiefs a first hand picture of the gravity of the situation, and we knew the SQ would not be so stupid as to come into the community and raid while the chiefs were meeting. The chiefs were brought in by boat across the river because the SQ had closed off our territory keeping out food and medicines and harassing our people."

"Many times ultimatums were issued to us to take the barricades down and then we would talk afterwards. This was unacceptable to us as history taught us that the white man's promises have been routinely violated."

"John Ciaccia was working under the direction of the federal and provincial governments' Crisis Committee which reported to the Prime Minister's Office. The issue was the



golf course land, which was used by the province of Quebec to try to get jurisdiction over the Mohawk Nation, to use this opportunity to resolve the Indian question once and for all. We wanted a negotiating process and they wanted a final military solution!"

Briere demanded, "Who is the War Chief of the men of the community?"

"He is the person who is given the responsibility to implement the will of the people. He is selected within the Longhouse process."

"What are the dealings between the Mohawk Council and the Longhouse?"

"Both bodies have a responsibility to ensure the well-being of the community. The Longhouse is the legitimate government of the Mohawk Nation. It is the original natural government of our people. Presently, we are in the process of dismantling or ousting the Indian Act council so that traditional government will be the only government of the community. The imposed white man's system will be done away with.

"The people were of one mind to defend. Chief Joe Norton was on the negotiating team, was part of the coalition and the main spokesman for the Kahnawake territory."

"How were decisions made?"

"There were many meetings called at various places and times to discuss strategy, outside the cultural center, at the Knights of Columbus hall and other halls. The mandate was to stop the military confrontation, to bring the issue back to the table, and to ensure there would be no loss of life. We did not want anybody to get killed just because Quebec and Canada had abandoned their responsibility and left the resolution to the municipality of Oka, the SQ and the Army.

"Who decided to take the action in the two territories?"

"We did not initiate this armed standoff, we were defending ourselves and our territory. You don't need a mandate for this.

"Mr. Norton was the main spokesman from Kahnawake. At the conclusion people from the Iroquois Confederacy were brought together to bring the issues before the negotiating process."

"Where is the main Longhouse in Kahnawake?"

"The main communal building is the Longhouse on Route 207."

"Is this the main Longhouse that services all the Six Nations?"

"No. The meeting of the chiefs of the Iroquois nations is held in Onondaga near Syracuse. Because of the interference of the Europeans and the artificial line that was drawn in the middle of our territory forming Canada and the United States, there is also a main Longhouse in Ohsweken, near Brantford, Ontario."

"Who is the War Chief?"

"His name is *Aionwes*."

Briere's face reddened, "What is his English name?"

"The name is his position and his English name is not relevant. Because of the way we are harassed it would endanger the person if I gave it to you. I have my beliefs and feelings about this matter."

Briere begged the Judge, "Please. What if I were to subpoena this War Chief, there may be more than one War Chief. I want his English name! I want it!"

Julio Peris asked Billy, "Do you have any objections to giving his name?"

"Yes. The name has no relevance to the case."

Julio addressed the Judge, "Even though knowing the name might have been relevant to the trial, it does not advance

the case of the sentencing."

Judge Greenberg said, "I will have to rule on this. The witness came forward and took an oath. The Crown is entitled to know who the War Chief is. Should he wish to subpoena that person, he could not do so using the Mohawk title."

Briere asked, "Mr. Two Rivers, what is the name of this person who is called .. Hayouwas?"

"It is Allen Delaronde."

"Oh! There was a situation on May 11, 1991, a riot at the Peacekeepers station in Kahnawake where someone was injured after being hit over the head with a radio. Was the War Chief there? And this Dale Dione, is she a War Chief?"

Dale, well known to Briere, was sitting behind him in the courtroom.

Billy laughed, "No, a woman cannot become a War Chief. But our women are very good fighters, as you saw in the fight with the soldiers at the Longhouse and elsewhere."



Is Dale Dione the Mohawk Nation War Chief?

"Are there any dealings in Kahnawake between the Mohawk Council and Allen Delaronde?"

"Not now, we are not at war. In 1990 he was War Chief responsible for the office."

"Did he make decisions alone or under the Mohawk Council?"

"He makes decisions alone."

Briere was startled, "You mean you do not give instructions to the War Chief?"

"Politicians make decisions on war and the soldiers fight them. As one of the people we all have input. The War Chief is answerable to the people."

"There are no links between the office of War Chief and the Mohawk Council? The Mohawk Council gave no directions to the warriors through the summer of 1990?"

"The warriors are the men who are supervised by the War Chief to defend the territory. If the action was offensive, then the supervision would be different. There is one War Chief in Kahnawake and another in Kanehsatake."

"Was the War Chief part of the negotiations?"

"He remained in the community to coordinate the defensive action in support of Kanehsatake, so there would be no further military intervention by the SQ and Quebec. The whole process was geared to force the issue back to the negotiation table."

"Did you agree with the War Chief's dealings with the warriors?"

"As one of the people I supported it."

Briere asked if the Mohawk Council was in agreement with the actions of the War Chief and the warriors.

"He was doing a good job. The Mohawk Council as an instrument of the government of Canada, has no involvement."

"When you had dealings with the government representations on such issues as weapons, the warriors and the Barricades at Oka, you had no say?"

"The people acted together, using common sense, to deal with the government and the situations. Chief Joe Norton was designated by the people at a public meeting after July 11, 1990 to be the spokesman."

"How do you call a meeting to discuss this?"

"Someone went around the territory beating a drum in the back of pickup and told us to be at this meeting."

Briere asked, "How did representatives get selected?"

"People know the capabilities of the people and select them."

(In white society a person gets elected and then represents the people on all issues, whether he knows anything or not, and usually messes up! And then you can't get him out until his term is up!)

"Where was the meeting held?"

"In the Longhouse. There were 400 to 500 people inside and hundreds more outside. It is an open process, depending on the topic and gravity of the situation. The talks with the government had broken down. The issue was taking Indian land for the golf course and the police firing on people who were peacefully protesting this. We were surrounded by barricades, the armed forces were around us and the situation was volatile. We were behind barricades. The main concern at the meeting was to find spokesmen for us."

"How many were selected?"

Billy said that Joe Norton and Joe Deom were selected.

"That makes two?"

"Yes. Both from Kahnawake. Their mandate was to bring the issue back to the table. There were many meetings at the TC, Trappist Monastery, Hilton and a restaurant on the

North Island to get us away from the media, who found us anyway."

"You people blocked the Mercier Bridge."

"It was a support movement."

"Did Allen Delaronde coordinate it?"

"Yes."

Judge Greenberg intervened, "We are dealing with sentencing hearing, not a rehashing of everything that went on everywhere."

Briere commented, "The negotiating team that went to Oka had no control over the warriors and the War Chief. Your negotiating team was only concerned with the golf course land and the paramilitary intervention of the SQ?"

"The SQ brought this on themselves when they opened fire on women and children. The need to protect ourselves brought this crisis on."

"How did your mandate evolve so as to claim sovereignty?"

"Sovereignty has always been there since time immemorial. Just because it has been bastardized by government legislation does not mean it does not exist. We are sovereign. We have land, a culture, a language and a legitimate government. These are our fundamental rights. Illegal behaviour of the Quebec government to usurp land it has no damn right to does not change this."

"What land are you referring to?"

"Our land, Turtle Island, the North American continent."

"Don't you know that the land issues in Oka were resolved in 1912 by the Privy Council?"

"No, we don't agree with it. Was it by war, conquest or robbery? None of these. The Mohawk Nation people were moved to Oka from Montreal, and the priests were put in charge to look after their spiritual needs. The Privy Council

decided the land issue in favour of the dominant society."

"Do you know these men, Ron Cross and Gordon Lazore, as warriors?"

"I know Mr. Cross as a person who was doing his duty. Gordon Lazore is from Akwesasne whom I never had the pleasure of getting to know personally."

They wanted to keep Billy Two Rivers around (because they liked him) but he had to catch a plane to get to a 'secret' meeting somewhere to keep the wheels of the Mohawk Nation in motion.

The Dragon Lady asked a question about some motion or other and its constitutionality. She said she had been in court before and did not get a chance to present it, whatever it is. She asked for a 48 hour delay so she can bring her two witnesses and will be in court on Thursday morning. It might have to do with the question of the three issues raised in Julio Peris's motion regarding minimum sentence, cruel and unusual punishment and consecutive or concurrent sentencing being unconstitutional. Dragon lady will have her day in court on Thursday.

#### Chief Joe Norton of Kahnawake

Joe has been chief since 1981. He knows Ronald Cross. "He's is not a personal friend of mine. I lived near him."

Julio asked Joe Norton, "How do the Mohawk view the land issue?"

"We have a very strong spiritual connection to our land, and our duty is to protect the land and people during stress, war and strife. There are many examples of our land being threatened when outsiders attempted to take it away. We have used every means possible to settle the matter as peacefully as possible, and have been forced to defend our land physically. The term 'warrior' is European. The Mohawk term,

*Rotiskenekete*, means 'carrying the burden of peace'. There is no such word for warrior. *Skennen* means 'peace' and *kete* means 'carrying a burden'.

"What is the role of the .. pardon me for using the expression .. warriors?"

"From birth to death you are part of the Men's Society. It is our responsibility to carry out our duty. It is a benevolent society in times of peace, such as putting food on the table, participating in the political system, dealing with other nations. During times of war the men must protect the people and the land in whatever way they see fit. The first reaction is to find a negotiated settlement by using reason. After everything fails, then we defend ourselves."

"What caused the men to go to Kanehsatake?"

"In July 1990, nobody expected the event to go to the extent that it went. It was a volatile situation. Our people understood that our brothers and sisters had been invaded by excessive armed forces and it was our responsibility to support them. Literally thousands of people in Kahnawake, our allies and supporters got involved in the effort.

"We had two mandates, from the people who elected me, and from the Longhouse people. We realized that we are all Mohawk living together, united we stand, divided we fall. I reported to the three clans at the Longhouse."

"Thank you Mr. Norton."

Briere began his cross-examination of Joe Norton, "How did you give your report?"

"I just went in there and gave my report."

"What are the links between the Longhouse and the Mohawk Council?"

"Since 1979 we have been given a mandate by the people to do away with the Indian Act form of government, which is really an administrative arm of the Canadian government, and



to bring back the traditional system."

Suddenly a bomb threat! The court cleared out. The Fire Department and bomb squad arrived. After 45 minutes the bomb was either found or not. We were allowed back in the court. This time we were all searched, Indian and white. Previous to this only Indians were heavily searched. Every time we went into court, it was like boarding an airplane.

Joe Norton was able to continue, "All are answerable to our clans which come together and reach agreements on issues."

Briere asked, "How are the clan mothers selected?"

"By a traditional system. The Mohawk Council is administrative and deals with matters related to the federal government. We coordinate our activities with the Longhouse. We have a joint office in the Hague for our international work."

"Who was picked to be on the negotiating team during the Crisis?"

"From Kahnawake we had Andrew Delisle, Francis Boots, Don Martin and myself."

"How many were negotiators on a day to day basis?"

"They were not always the same faces every day." (This conflicted with the style of the mainstream system negotiators who kept demanding that only one person represent the Mohawk Nation.)

"How many were from Kahnawake?"

"Ten people, depending on the strategy. The majority of strategy sessions took place behind the Canadian Army razor wire in Kanehsatake at the Treatment Centre, after the day's negotiations, and lasted all night. People came and went. There was a maximum of 20 at a time trying to settle the issue without loss of life and negotiating for permanent solutions."

"At the Treatment Centre there were representatives of the

Men's Society?"

Joe Norton said there were.

Briere leaned over to Joe and asked, "What are their names?"

"What is the purpose of your question?"

"Are you, Mr Norton, aware that the whole population of Canada was taken hostage by the Mohawk during the whole summer!!"

"These people will be going to trial and I don't want to give you their names."

Judge Greenberg got into the act and accused Briere, "You are going on a fishing expedition and I will not allow Mr. Norton to answer this question."

Joe Norton continued, "I was not an active participant of the Warrior Society. Like many others, I took up the defence of Kahnawake and Kanehsatake against the attack of the SQ Swat Team, which attacked the barricade that had been there since March 1990. I am aware that Public Security Minister Elkas and Native Affairs Minister Ciaccia did not know the attack would take place." Joe Norton leaned over and asked, "Are you aware of that?"

Briere was getting redder in the face, "That lady over there is smiling and laughing all the time!" He pointed without looking to the reporter from the Mohawk Nation News Service (that's me).

Judge Greenberg said, "She is sitting at the reporter's table alone and the audience is very well behaved today."



Joe Norton continued, "I have known Ronald Cross, and he is not a criminal, and has not been in trouble. He was a construction worker. I have not heard anything bad about him."

Briere continued, "What about the May 11, 1991 riot in Kahnawake at the Peacekeepers Station?"

"It was a disturbance of the peace but not a riot. (That was Ron Cross's stag party). A group of people were attending a party and one guy was arrested for disturbing the peace. I was called to try to calm things down. They wanted him to be given a break. It started at 11:00 at night and ended at 1:00 A.M."

"Was there any damage to property?"

"A tire was slashed."

Briere asked if any people entered the police station?

"No. The Crisis was still fresh in everybody's mind, there was still a lot of anger and they were letting off steam. That's all! Mr. Cross was angry and demanded the person be released. He left after some shoving and pushing and then the people disbursed. They did not want this person to be taken into custody by the SQ who have the habit of abusing and harming our people."

Briere decided to change the subject, "Did you have meetings with the leadership in Kanehsatake?"

"We always had dealings with the people in Kanehsatake prior to the Crisis, and with George Martin who disappeared two weeks after July 11th. After that there was no one there to deal with."

Briere did not want to get into any questioning about his Chief witness Grand KKKlan Chief George Martin who abandoned his people and was found by the jury to be a liar.

### Chief Gerry Peltier of Kanehsatake

"I am a Mohawk citizen of Kanehsatake. The Pines has always been the heart and soul of the people. It is precious and has a deep meaning. The elders picked medicines and performed ceremonies there. It has always been left in its natural state."

Julio asked, "What do the pine trees represent?"

"The pine tree is an important Iroquois symbol of the tree of peace. The land overlooks the beautiful Lake of Two Mountains. The pines have to hold on the soil, to keep the land intact. Otherwise the sand would be blown away."

"Before 1990 certain developers wanted our traditional pines, to destroy our traditional territory. Different leaders of Kanehsatake fought to protect this sacred area."

"We have seen destruction in spite of our protests. We have sent petitions to the government of Canada to stop the golf course, and our pleas were ignored."

Julio asked, "Were you there throughout the crisis? What was it like, the tension, the fears, the chaos, the nervousness?"

"There was fear especially among our young kids who had been fired upon."

"What is your perception about the use of arms?"

"Our territory is sovereign and our sovereignty has never been given up, nor relinquished. To protect our lands we must use every means possible. We tried the land claims negotiations process. It failed. We tried the Canadian court system. It failed. The point came when there was nothing else to do. Nobody cared that this beautiful piece of land was going to be destroyed. We had no choice. Right now the negotiations are on hold until a meeting is held between our Mohawk negotiators, myself and the Prime Minister."

"Who are the warriors?"

"The label was put on by non-Indian society. It is a group of people who defend our people and our land whenever there is aggression. People might view me as a political warrior because I try to work out arrangements with Canada. A political warrior defends the interests of the present and unborn generations. When you are born as a First Nations citizen of this land, you are taught to defend your land and your people at all times."

"This Mohawk land you say is a total of 260 sq. miles. The major focus of the Crisis is called 'the commons'. When you speak of the warriors, the Men's Society, you speak of them defending the land. Were you part of any negotiating team?"

"Well, the Oka Crisis dates back to 270 years. July 11th to September 26th 1990 is only a small part of the whole Oka Crisis."

Briere than cross-examined Gerry Peltier with a few questions. "In what capacity were you involved during the crisis?"

"As a Mohawk citizen interested in bringing peace to the community. During the Crisis there was no community leadership. Chief George Martin and councillor Gerry Etienne ran away (like scared rabbits) and abandoned their people. The people banded together to form a committee which I was part of."

Briere did not want to ask too much about Grand KKKlan Chief George Martin and Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne, his star witnesses against Ron Cross who were discredited by everybody. He changed the subject, "You did use the court system and got a decision on the land by the Privy Council in 1912!"

"The court system failed us. The federal government negotiated against us, instead of listening to us. They should

have acted as our trustees and carried out their fiduciary responsibilities, helped us develop a case and provide the legal experts so that our representatives could better argue the land question. Whatever little financial resources the people were able to gather wasn't enough. The 1912 Privy Council Judgement should have done research and documentation."

"You mean you are challenging the decision of the Privy Council of 1912?!"

"Yes. Who do you think acted on behalf of the Mohawk Nation? Legal Aid appointed a lawyer. The land or territory that was invaded on July 11, 1990, the Pines, is part of the 260 sq. mile land claim of the Mohawk Nation."

Briere decided to stop asking him questions. Gerry would have probably got into the fact that the Federal government had again abandoned its political and fiduciary responsibilities in the Crisis of 1990 and left it to the military to resolve once and for all!

Wednesday, February 19, 1992  
The Sentencing

MNNS - Our political warriors have received severe sentences totalling 75 months over a fight! This fight that happened on the night of August 31, 1990 was with Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs, a Mohawk of Kanehsatake and stool pigeon for the Surete du Quebec. The Mohawk Nation said this was an internal matter which should have been settled by the people and not by the white man's court. However, Jacobs was friendly with the SQ and ran to them for protection after the fight. This brought in the Army to surround and contain the 62 men, women and children in Concentration Camp TC until September 26th, 1990.

After grandstanding for two and half hours on his reasons for his severe sentences, Judge Greenberg said Ron Cross showed no remorse, was prone to violence, had problems with alcohol and drugs, "would do it again", "is unrepentant" and probably cannot be reformed or rehabilitated. (Stop flattering him, Judge!)

Francis *Cry Baby* Jacobs became their main witness for the prosecution against the three accused, Lasagna, Noriega and 20-20. Judge Greenberg acknowledged that Jacobs was caught lying on the witness stand numerous times.

There were others liars at the trial too, like former Grand KKKlan Chief George Martin, Councillor Gerry *Butcher of the Truth* Etienne, Evelyn *Maid Marion* Diabo, Major *Weird Al* Tremblay, and the whole Army.

Judge Greenberg even recognized the centuries of injustice, human rights and treaty violations, theft of Indian lands, racism, suffering, anguish, poor health, the murder of millions of Indians by Europeans, distress, miserable living conditions, high suicide rate, agony of life, torment, almost

total unemployment, and genocide of the First Nations Indians, all deliberately inflicted by the Canadian government to kill off the Indians.

However, he said, "This does not excuse the Mohawk Nation from standing up and defending their lives and their land when they were attacked by the SQ paramilitary forces with automatic weapons, tear gas and concussion grenades, on July 11th 1990. Just because they opened fire on your women and children and tried to massacre you while you were peacefully protesting doesn't mean you have to take the law into your own hands!! What kind of people are you, anyway?" (That's how it sounded to me!)

This arrest, confinement, trial, conviction and sentence should never have happened had the Canadian government assumed its responsibility to negotiate rightful land claims with the Mohawk Nation.

The tactics used in this trial by the government is an old formula, developed to punish anyone who challenges its authority.

Rather than negotiating with the Mohawk Nation, they turned the issue over to the Military. They brought in the Canadian Army against our people, rather than negotiating, and criminalized our defensive actions.

Psychological warfare, media manipulation and political propaganda were used against the Mohawks and against the Canadian population too. It is all part of the "international war against terrorists", or against anyone who would question what the rulers or controllers of Canada are doing to the First Nations Indians, to destroy their human rights movements.

The rulers of Canada have more resources, money, agents and an incredibly sophisticated system to work with. They even use Indian people in their network.

For a while it sounded like Lasagna was going to get 21



years and Noriega about 15 years. But there was "dead time", which was served while awaiting bail, this and that was added, deducted, multiplied, scratched, combined, uncombined, concurrent and consecutive, until the Judge finally came up with *52 months for Lasagna* and *23 months for Noriega*.

How do people feel about the sentence? People are outraged by the blatant violations of our own laws, Canadian laws and international law. Still, we do have growing support from among students and ordinary people who want to help us resist this repression of any political opposition to violations of human rights and injustice.

This indictment against our men is part of a strategy to stop the Mohawk Nation movement for human rights. These convictions are designed to stop serious activism from developing among the Indian people. It is an attempt to divert attention away from the Canadian government's long term plan of destroying Indian rights and people.

They try to divide our movement by attacking us and then when we defend ourselves, they call it violence. They say our defensive action is illegal. The government tries to define the boundaries of the movement in every way possible so they can control it.

Major Alain Tremblay said that all of our actions were defensive. Yet the government says that the Mohawk people who defended themselves are terrorists. They insist we be tried only in the most narrow, criminal and technical way possible. They have charged us with being terrorists, which is meant to put us in the same level as the Mafia.

They have somewhat succeeded in building a wall between the more vocal sectors of our movement and the people who are engaging in the cause at a different level, such as participating in demonstrations.

The militarization of the St. Jerome courtroom is unprecedented. They put SQ high tech surveillance teams outside the courtroom and at every entrance of the courthouse, aimed mainly at the Mohawk defendants and our supporters. This tactic scares people from going into a courtroom ringed with armed police. This strategy portrayed us as "terrorists".

The atmosphere in the courtroom and the propaganda in the media was aimed at isolating us and to intimidate people from supporting us. As well, keeping track of us by police blockades around our territories is meant to further intimidate and isolate us.

The laws that our men were being tried under are criminal statutes. It means the Judge automatically can restrict the amount of political information that we could bring into the trial.

The forthcoming trial, on the other hand, could be a battleground to make it into a political trial, while the government will try to limit it to a narrow criminal trial.

We are a sovereign Mohawk Nation. We have a history, we have a human rights struggle that is centuries old. We are part of a progressive movement in this country that is fighting for change, to stop racist attacks and to stop human rights violations.

The Canadian government is in violation of international law, and has violated basic human rights throughout the Oka Crisis and afterwards, right up to the present. For example, by not prosecuting the KuKluxKlan and the white racist mobs who attacked our people during the Crisis, Canada encourages white supremacy and white supremacist organizations.

When the sentence was pronounced, both men remained quiet and held their heads high, which made us all proud. The courtroom was full of Mohawk supporters who gathered close to the men and said to them in Mohawk, "Thank you for what

you did for the Nation." And then they were taken for the last time out through the back door to the prison.

Now that we have several of our warriors in prison, we can relate our struggle to the many others in the world. There may even be more support for us than earlier because we can have more of a relationship with other mass movements. With imprisoned warriors, we can reevaluate our strategy and tactics. The military attack on the Mohawk people showed what the Canadian government's position on self-determination is. We made them show their hand. It is safe to say that the Mohawk Nation struggle for human rights and self-determination is ongoing and will never stop.



I did it for the Nation!

## AFTERWORD

By Karonhiahente, a Mohawk woman

It is now 1994, Lasagna and Noriega are still out on bail pending appeals, while 20-20 lives in some part of Turtle Island with his wife and children. The court still holds \$50,000 in bail money. In the subsequent trial of 41 other Oka defendants, all were acquitted of all criminal charges. Does this prove that what the Mohawks did was *political* and not *criminal* ... that the Mohawks were justified in what they did? Although the land issue is still unsettled, there has been no expansion to the golf course.

Today we still live in a police state. There has been no change whatsoever as far as political positions are concerned. We are still Mohawk citizens and Quebec and Canada still insist we are Quebec/Canadian citizens.

Canada and Quebec are fighting over the separation of Quebec from Canada. Much of the land base claimed by Quebec is Aboriginal territory. It must be remembered that the Mohawk Nation signed only peace treaties and never formally ceded any land in Quebec. This means that Quebec is trying to separate with our land without our consent.

As well, Quebec provides little human rights protection of native people in their so-called democratic process. Our people continue to be harassed, beaten and tortured, while no one believes us or listens to us.

It has come out in recent revelations that the elite Canadian airborne regiment stationed in Somalia committed the same atrocities against the native people there. This is the same regiment that surrounded Kanehsatake and Kahnawake in 1990. The public is waking up and realizing that the authorities here committed similar atrocities against our warriors during and since the 1990 Crisis. But for the Mohawks there is no forum to expose this and expect some

kind of reparation or justice.

The Crisis is not over. The mental battle lines are still drawn. Native people still hold that they have title to their lands and resources without interference from federal or provincial governments. This is their natural right, not a privilege. Canada and the provinces still hold that native people are an ethnic group within the Canadian mosaic ... and that although native people have certain privileges that other 'Canadians' do not have, essentially Indians are Canadians and their territories are ultimately that of Canada.

This view is completely unrealistic and out of touch with what is happening in the world. Mohawks and Indigenous people all over the world are fighting for recognition of their identity as nations and for rights to control their territories and ways of life. The Crisis of 1990 is the Mohawk version of this world-wide phenomenon.

What happens in the future is a good question. Unless Canada and Quebec revise their perspective on the First Nations – which means doing away with their colonialist attitudes and dealing with native peoples as equals – the probability of another and more bloody 'Oka Crisis' is likely. Co-existence through equality, is that so difficult?

OWERA is an Indian owned and operated company which provides the following products and services:

Books & Videos:

Hear Louis Karonhiaktajeh Hall speak on the *Great Law of Peace* in English and Mohawk, 8 Hours on 4 VHSVideo Tapes, and an illustrated Book.

The widely acclaimed book *Where Eagles Dare to Soar - Indians, Politics and AIDS*, the memoirs of Kevin White, a 31-year old Cree dying of AIDS; and a 45-minute video featuring Kevin telling his story.

*Okanada*, a video of the final days of the Mohawks and their allies behind the Army's razor wire at Kanehsatake/Oka in 1990.

*A Tale of One Mohawk*, the autobiography of Louis Karonhiaktajeh Hall, poet, artist and philosopher.

*Warriors Handbook and Rebuilding the Iroquois Confederacy* by Louis Karonhiaktajeh Hall.

*Lasagna: The Man Behind the Mask* by Helene Sevigny.

Paintings:

A series of original water colour paintings by Kevin White and original acrylic naive art by renown artist Hector Bustos.

Music:

Mini album *Mohawk Blood* singing *Have You Seen the Dawn* and *Can You Hear the Eagle's Cry*.

Workshops/Speakers:

Cultural Awareness and Dispute Resolution; speakers on Indian history, contemporary issues - the Oka Crisis of 1990, sovereignty, treaty and land rights.

For further information contact:

OWERA  
Box 333, Kahnawake  
(Quebec, Canada) J0L 1B0  
514/638-3584 Fax 635-8693







Born in 1940 into the Bear Clan of the Mohawk Nation at Kahnawake, Kahn-Tineta Horn is well known as an Indian rights activist. Included in the causes Kahn-Tineta has been involved in are the 1962 Conference on Indian Poverty in Washington D.C. and the blocking of the International Bridge at Akwesasne. Most recently as a woman warrior, she was behind the Canadian Army razor wires that surrounded the TC Concentration Camp in the 1990 Oka Crisis. After almost 20 years of service, Kahn-Tineta was fired by the Department of Indian Affairs for her involvement in the Oka Crisis.

Kahn-Tineta is frequently invited to the speaker's podium to give her views on North American Indian history and contemporary issues. An avid writer for many years, Kahn-Tineta has returned to her love of writing, working on her own material and editing the works of others. *Mohawk Warriors Three*, the account of the first trial of the warriors arrested after leaving the TC Concentration Camp, is Kahn-Tineta's first published book. Kahn-Tineta lives in Kahnawake with her 4 daughters and grandchild.

"Never did a court of law writer report such scenes interlaced with Mohawk humour as one finds when one swings into this particular court room. One must be prepared for an out of this world experience in law court proceedings and language. Parental relaxation is recommended and Uncle Jim is sure to say, 'The court room will never be the same!'"

- Louis Karoniaktajeh Hall